## Singapore Management University

## [Institutional Knowledge at Singapore Management University](https://ink.library.smu.edu.sg/)

[Research Collection School Of Economics](https://ink.library.smu.edu.sg/soe_research) **School of Economics** School of Economics

6-2020

# Deviance information criterion for latent variable models and misspecified models

Yong LI Renmin University of China

Jun YU Singapore Management University, yujun@smu.edu.sg

Tao ZENG Zhejiang University

Follow this and additional works at: [https://ink.library.smu.edu.sg/soe\\_research](https://ink.library.smu.edu.sg/soe_research?utm_source=ink.library.smu.edu.sg%2Fsoe_research%2F2383&utm_medium=PDF&utm_campaign=PDFCoverPages) 

**C** Part of the [Econometrics Commons](https://network.bepress.com/hgg/discipline/342?utm_source=ink.library.smu.edu.sg%2Fsoe_research%2F2383&utm_medium=PDF&utm_campaign=PDFCoverPages)

## **Citation**

LI, Yong; Jun YU; and ZENG, Tao. Deviance information criterion for latent variable models and misspecified models. (2020). Journal of Econometrics. 216, (2), 450-493. Available at: https://ink.library.smu.edu.sg/soe\_research/2383

This Journal Article is brought to you for free and open access by the School of Economics at Institutional Knowledge at Singapore Management University. It has been accepted for inclusion in Research Collection School Of Economics by an authorized administrator of Institutional Knowledge at Singapore Management University. For more information, please email [cherylds@smu.edu.sg.](mailto:cherylds@smu.edu.sg)

Published in Journal of Econometrics (2020), 216 (2), 450-493. https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jeconom.2019.11.002

## Deviance information criterion for latent variable models and misspecified models<sup>☆</sup>

## Yong Li ª, Jun Yu <sup>b</sup>, T[a](#page-1-1)o Zeng <sup>[c](#page-1-3),\*</sup>

<span id="page-1-2"></span><span id="page-1-1"></span>a *School of Economics and Institute of China's Reform & Development, Renmin University of China, Beijing, 100872, P.R. China* b *School of Economics and Lee Kong Chian School of Business, Singapore Management University, 90 Stamford Rd, 178903, Singapore*

<span id="page-1-3"></span><sup>c</sup> School of Economics, Academy of Financial Research, and Institute for Fiscal Big-Data & Policy of Zhejiang *University, Zhejiang, 310058, P.R. China*

### C11  $C12$ G12 *Keywords:* AIC TIC DIC Latent variable models Misspecified models Markov chain Monte Carlo

*JEL classification:*

#### A B S T R A C T

Deviance information criterion (DIC) has been widely used for Bayesian model comparison, especially after Markov chain Monte Carlo (MCMC) is used to estimate candidate models. This paper first studies the problem of using DIC to compare latent variable models when DIC is calculated from the conditional likelihood. In particular, it is shown that the conditional likelihood approach undermines theoretical underpinnings of DIC. A new version of DIC, namely DIC*<sup>L</sup>* , is proposed to compare latent variable models. The large sample properties of DIC*<sup>L</sup>* are studied. A frequentist justification of DIC*<sup>L</sup>* is provided. Like AIC, DIC*<sup>L</sup>* provides an asymptotically unbiased estimator to the expected Kullback– Leibler (KL) divergence between the DGP and a predictive distribution. Some popular algorithms, such as the EM, Kalman and particle filtering algorithms, are introduced to compute DIC*<sup>L</sup>* for latent variable models. Moreover, this paper studies the problem of using DIC to compare misspecified models. A new version of DIC, namely DIC*<sup>M</sup>* , is proposed and it can be regarded as a Bayesian version of TIC. A frequentist justification of DIC*<sup>M</sup>* is provided under misspecification. DIC*<sup>L</sup>* and DIC*<sup>M</sup>* are illustrated using asset pricing models and stochastic volatility models.

## **1. Introduction**

Deviance information criterion (DIC) of [Spiegelhalter et al.](#page-44-0) ([2002](#page-44-0)) is a popular method for model selection in the Bayesian community. It has been used in a wide range of fields such as biostatistics, ecology, etc. According to [Spiegelhalter](#page-44-1) [et al.](#page-44-1) [\(2014](#page-44-1)), [Spiegelhalter et al.](#page-44-0) ([2002](#page-44-0)) is the third most cited paper in international mathematical sciences between 1998 and 2008. Up to April 2019, it has received more than 5,800 citations on the Web of Knowledge and nearly 10,000 citations on Google Scholar. In economics and finance, DIC has received a lot of applications, for example, in stochastic frontier models ([Galán et al.](#page-43-0), [2014\)](#page-43-0), dynamic factors models [\(Bai and Wang,](#page-43-1) [2015](#page-43-1)), stochastic volatility models [\(Chan and](#page-43-2) [Grant](#page-43-2), [2016a;](#page-43-2) [Berg et al.](#page-43-3), [2004](#page-43-3)), and VAR models ([Chan and Eisenstat](#page-43-4), [2018\)](#page-43-4).

<span id="page-1-0"></span><sup>✩</sup> We wish to thank two referees, an AE, Jianqing Fan, Eric Renault, Peter Phillips and David Spiegelhalter for their helpful comments. Li gratefully acknowledges the financial support of the National Natural Science Foundation of China (71773130) and Beijing municipal fund for building worldclass universities (disciplines) of Renmin University of China. Yu thanks the Singapore Ministry of Education for Academic Research Fund under grant number MOE2013-T3-1-009. Zeng gratefully acknowledges the financial support from the Chinese Ministry of Education Project of Humanities and Social Sciences (18YJC790005) and the National Natural Science Foundation of China (71973122).

<span id="page-1-4"></span>Corresponding author.

*E-mail address:* [tzeng@zju.edu.cn](mailto:tzeng@zju.edu.cn) (T. Zeng).

The growth in popularity in DIC among applied researchers is understandable from a few aspects. First, DIC is a Bayesian version of the well-known Akaike Information Criterion (AIC) of [Akaike](#page-42-0) ([1973\)](#page-42-0). Like AIC, DIC selects a model to minimize a plug-in predictive loss. This objective may appeal to applied researchers. Second, unlike AIC which is based on the loglikelihood function (or deviance) with the maximum likelihood (ML) estimate (MLE) of parameters being plugged in, DIC is based on the deviance with the posterior mean of parameters being plugged in. [Li et al.](#page-43-5) [\(2017](#page-43-5)) gave details about the loss functions associated with AIC and DIC. The detach of DIC from MLE is important when candidate models are difficult to estimate by ML. In this case, applied researchers may prefer Bayesian estimation methods over ML. In Bayesian statistics, the recent development of Markov chain Monte Carlo (MCMC) methods has been a key step in making it possible to estimate large hierarchical models. Large hierarchical models are typically difficult to estimate by ML, making ML-based model comparison criteria hard to implement. Third, DIC has a penalty term that can take account of prior information. This penalty term is different from that in AIC which only depends on the number of parameters in a candidate model.

[Li et al.](#page-43-5) [\(2017\)](#page-43-5) provided a frequentist justification to DIC by showing that DIC is an asymptotically unbiased estimator of the expected Kullback–Leibler (KL) divergence between the data generating process (DGP) and a predictive distribution with the posterior mean plugged in. The justification requires two critical assumptions. The first assumption is the validity of the Bernstein–von Mises theorem and the standard ML large sample theory (such as consistency and asymptotic normality). The second assumption is that all candidate models are asymptotically correctly specified. Both assumptions can be too strong in practice and hence, it is important to relax them.

This paper makes two contributions to the literature on DIC. First, we point out that the Bernstein–von Mises theorem and the standard ML large sample theory may not hold for the latent variables in latent variable models when DIC is calculated based on the conditional likelihood (i.e., the probability of observed data conditional on the original model parameter and the latent variables). We then propose a new version of DIC, namely DIC*<sup>L</sup>* , in the context of latent variable models and provide a frequentist justification of DIC*<sup>L</sup>* under some regularity conditions. We show that DIC *<sup>L</sup>* is asymptotically equivalent to AIC when both are obtained the observed-data likelihood, that is, the likelihood with the latent variables being integrated out. We also propose three methods to compute DIC*<sup>L</sup>* in latent variable models.

Second, we propose a new version of DIC, namely DIC*<sup>M</sup>* , for comparing misspecified models. We then provide a frequentist asymptotic justification of DIC*<sup>M</sup>* and show that DIC*<sup>M</sup>* is asymptotically equivalent to Takeuchi information criterion (TIC) of [Takeuchi](#page-44-2) [\(1976](#page-44-2)).

The paper is organized as follows. Section [2](#page-2-0) reviews DIC for model comparison. In Section [3,](#page-4-0) we review the widely-used DIC based on the conditional likelihood for comparing latent variable models and explain why the Bernstein–von Mises theorem may not hold for latent variables. We also introduce DIC*<sup>L</sup>* based on the integrated likelihood for comparing latent variable models. Large sample properties of DIC*<sup>L</sup>* are studied and several general algorithms are introduced to compute DIC<sub>L</sub> in this section. Section [4](#page-14-0) introduces DIC<sub>M</sub> for misspecified models and obtains large sample relationships between DIC*<sup>M</sup>* and TIC. Section [5](#page-18-0) illustrates the methods using asset pricing models and stochastic volatility models. Section [6](#page-21-0) concludes the paper. The Appendix collects proof of theoretical results in the paper. An online supplement proves two statements in [Remark](#page-15-0) [4.2](#page-15-0).

## **2. DIC for Bayesian model comparison**

<span id="page-2-0"></span>Arguably the most important development in the Bayesian model comparison literature in recent years is DIC of [Spiegelhalter et al.](#page-44-0) [\(2002](#page-44-0)). Compared with Bayes factors (BFs) that compare models through their "posterior probabilities" and try to search for the "true" model, DIC tries to find a better model for making "prediction" of replicate data.

DIC enjoys several desirable features. First, DIC is easy to calculate when the likelihood function has a closed-form expression and the posterior distribution is obtained by MCMC. Second, it applies to a wide range of statistical models. Third, unlike BFs, it is not subject to the Jeffreys–Lindley paradox and can be used when improper priors are used.

Consider a candidate parametric model, M, denoted by  $p(y|M,\theta)$  which is used to fit the data  $\mathbf{y}=(y_1,y_2,\ldots,y_n)'$ , where  $\theta$  is the parameter with P dimensions and  $\theta \in \Theta \subseteq R^P$ . We will write  $p(y|M, \theta)$  as  $p(y|\theta)$  when there is no confusion. Letting  $D(\theta) = -2 \ln p(\mathbf{y}|\theta)$ , DIC of [Spiegelhalter et al.](#page-44-0) [\(2002](#page-44-0)) is given by

$$
DIC = D(\bar{\theta}) + 2P_D, \tag{1}
$$

where  $\bar{\theta}$  is the posterior mean of  $\theta$ , and  $P_D$ , known as "effective number of parameters", is given by:

$$
P_D = -2 \int \left[ \ln p(\mathbf{y}|\boldsymbol{\theta}) - \ln p(\mathbf{y}|\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}) \right] p(\boldsymbol{\theta}|\mathbf{y}) d\boldsymbol{\theta}.
$$
 (2)

Spiegelhalter et al. interpret D  $(\bar{\pmb{\theta}})$  as the Bayesian measure of model fit and  $P_D$  as the penalty term to measure model complexity.

DIC and AIC have some important differences. First, AIC is based on the MLE, while DIC is based on the posterior mean. Second, in AIC the penalty term depends on the number of parameters, *P*, which is used to measure the model complexity. Hence, it is invariant to the prior. When the prior is informative, it imposes additional restrictions on the parameter space. In DIC the penalty term is determined by  $P<sub>D</sub>$  whose value may depend on the prior.  $P<sub>D</sub>$  may not be the same as  $P$  in finite samples. As commented by [Brooks](#page-43-6) [\(2002](#page-43-6)), an important contribution of DIC is to provide a way to measure the model complexity when an informative prior is used in a finite-sample setting.

Recently, under some mild regularity conditions, [Li et al.](#page-43-5) [\(2017](#page-43-5)) provided a frequentist justification of DIC in the same manner as how AIC was justified. That is, both DIC and AIC try to find a model that asymptotically minimizes the expected KL divergence between the DGP and the corresponding predictive distribution. Other information criteria for comparing candidate models are possible. One example is the Bayesian information criterion (BIC) of [Schwarz](#page-44-3) [\(1978](#page-44-3)). More recently, [Geweke and Amisano](#page-43-7) ([2011](#page-43-7)) proposed a method that compares log predictive scores although, to the best of our knowledge, no general result is available on how to split samples when computing the log predictive scores. In Section [4.2,](#page-16-0) properties of AIC/DIC are compared with those of BFs/BIC. In this section, we first give a simple review of the justification of AIC/DIC.

Let **y***rep* = ( *y*1,*rep*, . . . , *yn*,*rep*) be the independent replicate data of *n* observations generated by the same mechanism that gives rise to the observed data **y** and *g*(**y**) is the DGP. The quantity that measures the quality of the candidate model in terms of its ability to make predictions of replicate data is given by the following KL divergence between  $g$   $(\mathbf{y}_{rep})$  and  $p(\mathbf{y}_{rep}|\mathbf{y})$ :

<span id="page-3-0"></span>
$$
KL\left[g\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}\right), p\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}|\mathbf{y}\right)\right] = E_{\mathbf{y}_{rep}}\left[\ln \frac{g\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}\right)}{p\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}|\mathbf{y}\right)}\right] = \int \left[\ln \frac{g\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}\right)}{p\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}|\mathbf{y}\right)}\right] g\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}\right) d\mathbf{y}_{rep} = \int \ln g\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}\right)g\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}\right) d\mathbf{y}_{rep} - \int \ln p\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}|\mathbf{y}\right)g\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}\right) d\mathbf{y}_{rep},
$$
\n(3)

where p  $(\mathbf{y}_{rep}|\mathbf{y})$  denote a generic predictive distribution. Clearly the first term is the same across all candidate models which is denoted by *C*. Thus,

$$
KL\left[g\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}\right), p\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}|\mathbf{y}\right)\right] = C - \int \ln p\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}|\mathbf{y}\right)g\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}\right) d\mathbf{y}_{rep}.
$$

Let AIC:=  $-2\ln p\left(\mathbf{y}|\hat{\theta}(\mathbf{y})\right)+2P$  where  $\hat{\theta}(\mathbf{y})$  is the MLE of  $\theta$  based on  $\mathbf{y}.$  If one chooses  $p\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}|\mathbf{y}\right)$  in ([3](#page-3-0)) to be the plugin distribution  $p\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}|\hat{\pmb{\theta}}(\mathbf{y})\right)$ , then it is well-known that (see, for example, [Burnham and Anderson](#page-43-8) ([2002\)](#page-43-8)), under some regularity conditions,

<span id="page-3-2"></span>
$$
E_{\mathbf{y}}\left\{2 \times KL\left[g\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}\right), p\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}|\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(\mathbf{y})\right)\right]\right\} = 2C + E_{\mathbf{y}}E_{\mathbf{y}_{rep}}\left[-2\ln p\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}|\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(\mathbf{y})\right)\right]
$$
  
= 2C + E\_{\mathbf{y}}\left(-2\ln p\left(\mathbf{y}|\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(\mathbf{y})\right) + 2P\right) + o(1) = 2C + E\_{\mathbf{y}}(AIC) + o(1), (4)

where the expectations *E***<sup>y</sup>** and *E***<sup>y</sup>***rep* are related to *g* (**y**) and *g* ( **y***rep*) , respectively. Hence, AIC is an asymptotically unbiased estimator of the expected KL divergence minus 2*C*, that is,

<span id="page-3-3"></span>
$$
E_{\mathbf{y}}\left\{2 \times \text{KL}\left[g\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}\right), p\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}|\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(\mathbf{y})\right)\right]\right\} - 2C := EKL_{ML}.
$$
\n(5)

If one chooses  $p\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}|\mathbf{y}\right)$  in [\(3](#page-3-0)) to be the plug-in distribution  $p\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}|\bar{\theta}(\mathbf{y})\right)$ , where  $\bar{\theta}(\mathbf{y})$  is the posterior mean of  $\theta$  based on **y**, [Li et al.](#page-43-5) ([2017\)](#page-43-5) showed that

<span id="page-3-4"></span><span id="page-3-1"></span>
$$
E_{\mathbf{y}}\left\{2 \times KL\left[g\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}\right), p\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep} | \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(\mathbf{y})\right)\right]\right\} = 2C + E_{\mathbf{y}}E_{\mathbf{y}_{rep}}\left[-2\ln p\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep} | \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(\mathbf{y})\right)\right]
$$
  
= 2C + E\_{\mathbf{y}}\left(-2\ln p\left(\mathbf{y} | \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(\mathbf{y})\right) + 2P\_{D}\right) + o(1) = 2C + E\_{\mathbf{y}}\left(\text{DIC}\right) + o(1). (6)

DIC is an asymptotically unbiased estimator of the expected KL divergence minus 2*C*, that is,

$$
E_{\mathbf{y}}\left\{2 \times \text{KL}\left[g\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}\right), p\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep} | \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(\mathbf{y})\right)\right]\right\} - 2C := EKL_B.
$$
\n(7)

The smaller AIC/DIC, the better the predictive performance of the candidate model. When the prior information is dominated by likelihood asymptotically, [Li et al.](#page-43-5) [\(2017\)](#page-43-5) also showed that DIC and AIC are asymptotically equivalent, that is,

 $DIC = AIC + o_p(1), P_D = P + o_p(1).$ 

This explains why DIC is regarded as a Bayesian version of AIC.

When deriving the asymptotic theory given in  $(6)$  $(6)$  $(6)$ , [Li et al.](#page-43-5) ([2017\)](#page-43-5) imposed a set of regularity conditions. Essentially these conditions ensure the following key asymptotic properties. First, the Bernstein–von Mises theorem holds. That is, the posterior distribution converges to a normal distribution with the MLE as its mean and the inverse of the second derivative of the negative log-likelihood function evaluated at the MLE as its covariance. In addition, the standard large sample theory for ML holds, including consistency, asymptotic normality with the covariance being the inverse of the second derivative of the negative log-likelihood function evaluated at the true parameter value. Second, all candidate models are correctly specified, at least asymptotically.

Unfortunately, the Bernstein–von Mises theorem and the standard large sample theory for ML may not hold for latent variables in many latent variable models. Moreover, the assumption that all candidate models are asymptotically correctly specified is too strong. In Section [4](#page-14-0) we deal with the latent variables models and in Section [5](#page-18-0) we relax the assumption of correct model specification.

## **3. DIC for latent variable models**

## <span id="page-4-0"></span>*3.1. MCMC and data augmentation*

<span id="page-4-3"></span>A typical hierarchical model used in economics and finance involves latent variables. Latent variables have figured prominently in consumption decision, investment decision, labor force participation, the conduct of monetary policy, indices of economic activity, inflation dynamics, and other economic, business and financial activities and decisions. Not surprisingly, latent variable models have been widely used in financial econometrics, macroeconometrics and microeconometrics. For example, in financial econometrics it is often found that values of stocks, bonds, options, futures, and derivatives are often determined by a small number of factors. These factors, such as the level, the slope and the curvature in the term structure of interest rates, are latent. In macroeconomics, a well-known recent example of latent variable models is the dynamic factor model. Based on macroeconomic theory, the dynamic factor model attempts to explain aggregate economic phenomena by taking into account the fact that the economy is affected by some important factors. In microeconometrics, many discrete choice models and panel data models involve unobserved variables to capture observed heterogeneity across economic entities ([Norets](#page-43-9), [2009](#page-43-9); [Stern,](#page-44-4) [1997\)](#page-44-4).

Let **y** be the observed data and  $\mathbf{z}=(z_1,z_2,\ldots,z_n)'$  $\mathbf{z}=(z_1,z_2,\ldots,z_n)'$  $\mathbf{z}=(z_1,z_2,\ldots,z_n)'$  be the latent variables. <sup>1</sup> Let a latent variable model be indexed by a set of *P* parameters,  $\pmb{\theta}\in\pmb{\Theta}\subseteq R^P$ . Let  $p(\pmb{y}|\pmb{\theta})$  be the likelihood function of the observed data (denoted the observed-data likelihood), and  $p(y, z | \theta)$  be the complete-data likelihood function. The relationship between the two functions is:

<span id="page-4-2"></span><span id="page-4-1"></span>
$$
p(\mathbf{y}|\boldsymbol{\theta}) = \int p(\mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z}|\boldsymbol{\theta}) d\mathbf{z}.
$$
 (8)

Typically the integral in ([8\)](#page-4-2) does not have a closed-form solution. Consequently, the ML method and hence, AIC are difficult to use as it requires calculations of  $p(\mathbf{y}|\theta)$  for each value of  $\theta$  during numerical optimizations.

If the Bayesian posterior analysis is conducted based on the observed-data likelihood, *p*(**y**|θ), one would end up with the same problem as in ML since  $p(\mathbf{y}|\theta)$  does not have a closed-form expression and, hence, the calculation of  $\ln p(\mathbf{y}|\theta)$ for each MCMC draw is very time-consuming. An alternative way to conduct the Bayesian posterior analysis is based on *p*(**y**|θ, *z*) (i.e. the conditional likelihood) which is often available in closed-form. In the conditional likelihood, we treat **z** in the same way as θ. In the Bayesian literature, this parameter expansion technique based on *p*(**y**|θ, *z*) is known as data augmentation; see [Tanner and Wong](#page-44-5) ([1987](#page-44-5)) for further details. The closed-form expression of *p*(**y**|θ, *z*) greatly facilitates MCMC sampling from the joint posterior distribution  $p(\theta, z|y)$ . After a sufficiently long period for a burn-in phase, the simulated random samples can be regarded as random observations from the joint distribution. The statistical analysis can be established from these simulated posterior random observations. As a by-product of the Bayesian analysis, one also obtains MCMC samples for the latent variables **z**. From the above discussion, it can be seen that data augmentation is the key technique for conducting the Bayesian posterior analysis of latent variable models, making MCMC a powerful alternative to ML as an estimation technique.

When the observed-data likelihood *p*(**y**|θ) is not available in closed-form, DIC based on *p*(**y**|θ) is very difficult to obtain, although the MCMC samples from  $p(\theta, z|y)$  are available. That explains why the widely-used DIC is obtained from the conditional likelihood *p*(**y**|θ, *z*) but not from *p*(**y**|θ) when there are latent variables in a candidate model. In fact, it is the default choice if one uses WinBUGS, a popular Bayesian software. As acknowledged in [Spiegelhalter et al.](#page-44-1) ([2014\)](#page-44-1), this default way of calculating DIC from  $p(y|\theta, z)$  for latent variable models "is only to make the technique computationally feasible".

Unfortunately, when the DIC is calculated from *p*(**y**|θ, *z*), the Bernstein–von Mises theorem and the standard ML large sample theory do not hold for latent variables. In fact, the posterior distribution of latent variables may not be normally distributed as the sample size goes to infinity. The posterior means of latent variables may not be close to the MLE even asymptotically. The MLE of latent variables may not be consistent. As a result, the asymptotic justification developed in [Li et al.](#page-43-5) [\(2017](#page-43-5)) is no longer applicable.

The problem of calculating DIC from  $p(y|\theta, z)$  has been pointed out in the literature. For example, [Millar](#page-43-10) [\(2009](#page-43-10)) documented strong evidence of the poor performance of DIC in negative binomial and Poisson-lognormal models using simulated data. He found that DIC almost always prefers the Poisson-gamma model instead of the Poisson-lognormal model, even when data are simulated from a Poisson-lognormal model. [Millar and McKechnie](#page-43-11) ([2014\)](#page-43-11) documented strong evidence of the poor performance of DIC in state-space models using simulated data. [Chan and Grant](#page-43-2) [\(2016a,](#page-43-2)[b\)](#page-43-12) showed that, in the context of stochastic volatility models, DIC tends to favor overfitted models using simulated data.

### *3.2. DIC for latent variable models*

As described in Section [3.1,](#page-4-3) in a latent variable model, there are three types of variables, the observed data **y**, the latent variables **z**, and the parameters θ. In the frequentist framework, the likelihood function, *p*(**y**|θ) = ∫ *p*(**y**, **z**|θ)d**z**, is

 $<sup>1</sup>$  Although we assume that the number of latent variables is the same as that of the observed data points, such an assumption may be relaxed.</sup> A more general assumption is that the number of latent variables grows proportionally with that of the observed data points. In this more general case, the theory discussed below continues to hold.

clearly defined. In this case, only θ, not **z**, are treated as parameters. In the Bayesian framework, however, three likelihood functions may be used,  $p(\mathbf{y}|\theta)$ ,  $p(\mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z}|\theta)$ , and  $p(\mathbf{y}|\theta, \mathbf{z})$  which correspond to the observed-data likelihood, the complete-data likelihood, and the conditional likelihood. Using the terminology of [Celeux et al.](#page-43-13) [\(2006](#page-43-13)), DIC based on *p*(**y**|θ) and *p*(**y**|θ, *z*) can be written, respectively, as

$$
\begin{aligned} \text{DIC}_1 &= -2\ln p(\mathbf{y}|E_{\theta|\mathbf{y}}(\boldsymbol{\theta})) + 2\left\{-2E_{\theta|\mathbf{y}}\left[\ln p(\mathbf{y}|\boldsymbol{\theta})\right] + 2\ln p(\mathbf{y}|E_{\theta|\mathbf{y}}(\boldsymbol{\theta}))\right\} := D\left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) + 2P_{D,1},\\ \text{DIC}_7 &= -2\ln p(\mathbf{y}|E_{\theta,z|\mathbf{y}}(\boldsymbol{\theta},\mathbf{z})) + 2\left\{-2E_{\theta,z|\mathbf{y}}\left[\ln p(\mathbf{y}|\boldsymbol{\theta},\mathbf{z})\right] + 2\ln p(\mathbf{y}|E_{\theta,z|\mathbf{y}}(\boldsymbol{\theta},\mathbf{z}))\right\} := D\left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}},\bar{\mathbf{z}}\right) + 2P_{D,7}. \end{aligned}
$$

 $DIC<sub>1</sub>$  is monitored and reported in WinBUGS when there is no latent variable. To compute  $DIC<sub>1</sub>$ , we approximate  $E_{\theta|\mathbf{y}}\left[\ln p(\mathbf{y}|\theta)\right]$  by  $\frac{1}{f}\sum_{j=1}^f\ln p\left(\mathbf{y}|\theta^{(j)}\right)$ . This approximation error can be made arbitrarily small for a large *J*. When  $p(\mathbf{y}|\theta)$ be available in closed-form,  $\frac{1}{f}\sum_{j=1}^J\ln p\left(\mathbf{y}|\theta^{(j)}\right)$  is easy to compute once the MCMC samples  $\left\{\theta^{(j)}\right\}_{j=1}^J$  are available even when *J* is very large. When there is no latent variable, *p*(**y**|θ) is often available in closed-form.

Unfortunately, for many latent variable models, such as state-space models, *p*(**y**|θ) is not available in closed-form. In this case, DIC<sup>1</sup> is difficult to compute because it needs to evaluate *p*(**y**|θ) for *J* times. Given that *J* is usually large, computing  $\frac{1}{J}\sum_{j=1}^{J} \ln p(\mathbf{y}|\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(j)})$  without an analytical expression for  $\ln p(\mathbf{y}|\boldsymbol{\theta})$  is time-consuming, making  $D(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}})$  and especially  $P_{D,1}$ difficult to obtain. In DIC7, the latent variables are regarded as parameters, and ln *p*(**y**|θ, *z*) often has an analytical expression. Hence, it is easy to compute  $\frac1j\sum_{j=1}^J\ln p\left(\mathbf y|\mathbf z^{(j)},\pmb\theta^{(j)}\right)$  once the MCMC samples  $\{\pmb\theta^{(j)},\mathbf z^{(j)}\}_{j=1}^J$  are available. Clearly,  $\frac{1}{J}\sum_{j=1}^J\ln p\left(\mathbf{y}|\mathbf{z}^{(j)},\pmb{\theta}^{(j)}\right)$  can arbitrarily well approximate  $D\left(\bar{\pmb{\theta}},\overline{\mathbf{z}}\right)$  for large *J*. That is why, when there are latent variables, data augmentation is used to obtain Markov chains for both **z** and θ. Following the suggestion of [Spiegelhalter et al.](#page-44-0) ([2002](#page-44-0)), DIC<sub>7</sub> is monitored and reported in WinBUGS for latent variable models. Clearly, the use of DIC<sub>7</sub> is for computational convenience.

However, from a theoretical viewpoint,  $DIC<sub>7</sub>$  has a few problems. First and foremost, with data augmentation, the dimension of the parameter space is much bigger, increasing from *P* to  $n + P$ . Since the dimension of the parameter space grows proportionally with the number of data points, the conditional likelihood *p*(**y**|θ, *z*) is not regular, and it leads to the well-known incidental parameter problem in econometrics where information about these incidental parameters stops accumulating after a finite number of observations, often one, have been taken; see for example [Neyman and Scott](#page-43-14) [\(1948](#page-43-14)) and [Lancaster](#page-43-15) ([2000](#page-43-15)). In this case, the MLE is inconsistent. Similarly, the Bernstein–von Mises theorem becomes invalid; see Page 89–90 of [Gelman et al.](#page-43-16) [\(2013](#page-43-16)). Therefore, DIC<sub>7</sub> lacks frequentist justification. In fact, DIC<sub>7</sub> may not provide an asymptotically unbiased estimator of the KL divergence. For the same reason, if AIC is constructed based on *p*(**y**|θ, *z*), then AIC would not provide an asymptotically unbiased estimator of the KL divergence.

To give an example where DIC<sub>7</sub> provide an asymptotically biased estimator of the KL divergence, let  $y_i|\alpha_i,\sigma^2\sim$  $N(\alpha_i, \sigma^2)$ ,  $\alpha_i \sim N(0, 1)$  for  $i = 1, \ldots, n$ . Clearly  $y_i | \sigma^2 \sim N(0, \sigma^2 + 1)$  and thus the MLE of  $\sigma^2$  is  $\hat{\sigma}^2 = \frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^n y_i^2 - 1$ .  $N(\alpha_i, \sigma^2)$ ,  $\alpha_i \sim N(0, 1)$  for  $i = 1, \ldots, n$ . Clearly  $y_i | \sigma^2 \sim N(0, \sigma^2 + 1)$  and thus the MLE of  $\sigma^2$  is  $\sigma^2 = \frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^n y_i^2 - 1$ .<br>It is straightforward to show  $\hat{\sigma}^2$  is  $\sqrt{n}$ -consistent and asymptotically as parameters, they are incidental in the sense of [Neyman and Scott](#page-43-14) ([1948\)](#page-43-14). The MLE of  $\alpha_i$  is  $\hat\alpha_i=y_i\sim N(\alpha_i,\sigma^2)$  which is correctly centered at  $\alpha_i$  but inconsistent as the variance of MLE does not go to zero as  $n$  grows. If  $\sigma^2=1$  and is assumed to be known, then  $P = n$  and the posterior distribution is  $\alpha_i|y_i \sim N(0.5y_i, 0.5)$ . The posterior mean (which is also the posterior mode) is  $\overline{\alpha_i} = 0.5 y_i$  which is not centered at the MLE. The posterior variance is 0.5 which does not go to zero as *n* grows. Clearly, both the standard ML large sample theory and the Bernstein–von Mises theorem fail to hold. These results are not surprising since only one observation  $(y_i)$  contains information about  $\alpha_i.$ 

Let  $\boldsymbol{\alpha} = (\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_n)'$  and  $\boldsymbol{\tilde{\alpha}}(\mathbf{y})$  be an estimator of  $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ . By evaluating [\(3](#page-3-0)) we have

$$
KL\left[g\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}\right), p\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep} | \tilde{\boldsymbol{\alpha}}(\mathbf{y})\right)\right] = E_{\mathbf{y}_{rep}}\left[\ln \frac{g\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}\right)}{p\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep} | \tilde{\boldsymbol{\alpha}}(\mathbf{y})\right)}\right]
$$
  
=  $C - \int \ln p\left(\mathbf{y}^{rep} | \tilde{\boldsymbol{\alpha}}(\mathbf{y})\right) g(\mathbf{y}^{rep}) d\mathbf{y}^{rep}$   
=  $C + \left[\frac{n}{2} \ln(2\pi\sigma^2) + \frac{n\left(\sigma^2 + 1\right)}{2\sigma^2} + \sum_{i=1}^n \frac{\tilde{\alpha}_i^2(\mathbf{y})}{2\sigma^2}\right].$  (9)

When  $\sigma^2=1$ , by plugging the MLE of  $\alpha_i$  (i.e.,  $\hat\alpha_i=y_i)$  into [\(9](#page-5-0)), multiplying both sides by 2 and taking expectation with respect to **y**, we have

<span id="page-5-0"></span>
$$
EKL_{ML} = n \ln(2\pi) + 2n + \sum_{i=1}^{n} E(y_i^2) = n \ln(2\pi) + 4n.
$$

However,

$$
E_{\mathbf{y}}(\text{AIC}) = E_{\mathbf{y}}\left(-2\ln p\left(\mathbf{y}|\hat{\alpha}_1,\ldots,\hat{\alpha}_n\right)\right) + 2n = n\ln(2\pi) + 2n.
$$

Similarly, by plugging the posterior mean of  $\alpha_i$  (i.e.,  $\overline{\alpha_i} = 0.5y_i$ ) into ([9\)](#page-5-0), multiplying both sides by 2 and taking expectation with respect to **y**, we have

$$
EKL_B = n \ln(2\pi) + 2n + \sum_{i=1}^n \frac{E(y_i^2)}{4} = n \ln(2\pi) + 2.5n.
$$

However,

$$
P_{D,7} = -2 \int \left[ \ln p(\mathbf{y}|\alpha) - \ln p(\mathbf{y}|\overline{\alpha}_1, ..., \overline{\alpha}_n) \right] p(\alpha|\mathbf{y}) d\alpha
$$
  
\n
$$
= -2 \int \left[ \ln p(\mathbf{y}|\alpha) \right] p(\alpha|\mathbf{y}) d\alpha + 2 \ln p(\mathbf{y}|\overline{\alpha}_1, ..., \overline{\alpha}_n)
$$
  
\n
$$
= \sum_{i=1}^n \int (y_i - \alpha_i)^2 p(\alpha_i|y_i) d\alpha_i - \frac{\sum_{i=1}^n y_i^2}{2}
$$
  
\n
$$
= \sum_{i=1}^n \left[ \frac{1}{2} + \frac{y_i^2}{4} \right] - \frac{\sum_{i=1}^n y_i^2}{2} = \frac{n}{2} - \frac{\sum_{i=1}^n y_i^2}{4},
$$
  
\n
$$
E_{\mathbf{y}} (\text{DIC}_7) = E_{\mathbf{y}} (-2 \ln p(\mathbf{y}|\overline{\alpha}_1, ..., \overline{\alpha}_n) + 2P_D)
$$
  
\n
$$
= E_{\mathbf{y}} \left( n \ln(2\pi) + \frac{\sum_{i=1}^n y_i^2}{2} + 2P_D \right) = n \ln(2\pi) + n.
$$

Thus,

<span id="page-6-2"></span><span id="page-6-1"></span><span id="page-6-0"></span>
$$
EKL_{ML} = E_{\mathbf{y}}(AIC) + 2n,\tag{10}
$$

<span id="page-6-3"></span>
$$
EKL_B = E_{\mathbf{y}}(DIC_7) + 1.5n, \tag{11}
$$

$$
E_{\mathbf{y}}(P_{D,7}) = 0 \neq n + o(1), \tag{12}
$$

$$
E_{\mathbf{y}}(\text{AIC} - \text{DIC}_7) = n \neq o_p(1). \tag{13}
$$

According to [\(10\)](#page-6-0) and ([11](#page-6-1)), both AIC and DIC<sub>7</sub>, if calculated from the conditional likelihood, provide the asymptotically biased estimation of the corresponding expected KL divergence minus 2*C*. According to [\(12\)](#page-6-2), on average the effective number of parameter  $(P_D, \tau)$  is zero. According to [\(13\)](#page-6-3), on average AIC differs from DIC<sub>7</sub> by *n*. All these observations are at odds with the theory discussed earlier. The source of the problem lies in the presence of latent variables.

Second, sometimes a statistical model without latent variables can be represented by another model with latent variables. A leading example is the Student *t* distribution which can be rewritten as a normal–inverse-gamma distribution where the variance is assumed to follow an inverse-gamma distribution and hence, is treated as a latent variable. These two equivalent representations, even under the same priors, often lead to very different DIC values. The reason for this sharp discrepancy is that in the model without latent variables,  $DIC<sub>1</sub>$  is used while in the model with latent variables, DIC<sup>7</sup> is used. This problem arises in Section 8.2 of [Spiegelhalter et al.](#page-44-0) [\(2002](#page-44-0)) and in Model 8 of [Berg et al.](#page-43-3) [\(2004](#page-43-3)).

Third, due to data augmentation, the dimension of the parameter space becomes much larger and hence,  $DIC<sub>7</sub>$ is expected to be sensitive to transformations of latent variables. To illustrate this problem, we consider a simple transformation of latent variables in the well-known Clark model ([Clark,](#page-43-17) [1973](#page-43-17)) which is given by,

Model 1 : 
$$
y_t \sim N(\mu, \exp(h_t)), h_t \sim N(0, \sigma^2), t = 1, ..., n.
$$
 (14)

An equivalent representation of the model is

Model 2 : 
$$
y_t \sim N(\mu, \sigma_t^2), \sigma_t^2 \sim LN(0, \sigma^2), t = 1, ..., n,
$$
 (15)

where *LN* denotes the log-normal distribution. In both models there are latent variables. In Model 2 the latent variable is the volatility  $\sigma_t^2$  while the latent variable is the log-volatility  $h_t = \ln \sigma_t^2$  in Model 1. Hence, following the usual practice in the literature, DIC<sub>7</sub> is the relevant version. Since the two models are identical, we expect the two models give the same DIC<sub>7</sub> value. To calculate DIC<sub>7</sub>, we simulate 1000 observations from the model with  $\mu = 0, \sigma^2 = 0.5$ . Vague priors are selected for the two parameters, namely,  $\mu \sim N(0,100)$  ,  $\sigma^{-2} \sim \Gamma(0.001,0.001)$ . We run Gibbs sampler to make 240,000 simulated draws from the posterior distributions. The first 40,000 are discarded as burn-in samples. The remaining observations with every 10th observation are collected as effective observations for statistical inference. With data augmentation, the latent variables,  $h_t$  and  $\sigma_t^2$  are regarded as parameters, and we find that  $P_{D,7} = 89.806$  and  $DIC_7 = 2884.37$  for Model 1 but  $P_{D,7} = 59.366$  and  $DIC_7 = 2852.85$  for Model 2. These differences are very large. Given that we have identical models and priors and use the same dataset, the vast differences suggest that  $DIC<sub>7</sub>$  and  $P<sub>D.7</sub>$  are very sensitive to transformations of latent variables.

To summarize the problems with DIC<sub>7</sub> in the context of latent variable models, while DIC<sub>7</sub> is easier to calculate and has been used widely in practice, it suffers from several theoretical problems. While  $DIC_1$  has rigorously theoretical justification, it is very hard to compute from MCMC output since *p*(**y**|θ) is not available in closed-form.

## *3.3. DIC<sup>L</sup> for latent variable models*

Based on the discussion above, there is a great need to introduce a new Bayesian model selection criterion that has a valid justification and applies to general latent variable models and feasible to compute. In this section, we propose a new version of DIC, DIC*<sup>L</sup>* .

When  $p\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}|\mathbf{y}\right)$  in  $\overline{(3)}$  $\overline{(3)}$  $\overline{(3)}$  is chosen to be the plug-in distribution  $p\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}|\bar{\pmb{\theta}}(\mathbf{y})\right)$ , where  $\bar{\pmb{\theta}}(\mathbf{y})$  is the posterior mean of  $\pmb{\theta}$  (we simply write  $\bar{\theta}(y)$  as  $\bar{\theta}$  when there is no confusion), DIC<sub>L</sub> is defined as,<sup>[2](#page-7-0)</sup>

<span id="page-7-0"></span>
$$
DIC_L = D(\bar{\theta}) + 2P_L, \tag{16}
$$

$$
P_L = \mathbf{tr}\left\{ \mathbf{I}(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}) V(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}) \right\},\tag{17}
$$

where **tr** denotes the trace of a matrix and

$$
\mathbf{I}(\boldsymbol{\theta}) = -\frac{\partial^2 \ln p(\mathbf{y}|\boldsymbol{\theta})}{\partial \boldsymbol{\theta} \partial \boldsymbol{\theta}'}, \, V(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}) = E\left[\left(\boldsymbol{\theta} - \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) \left(\boldsymbol{\theta} - \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)' | \mathbf{y}\right].
$$

Clearly, the leading term in DIC<sub>L</sub> is the same as that in DIC<sub>1</sub>. However, the penalty term in DIC<sub>1</sub> is 2P<sub>D</sub> while it is 2P<sub>L</sub> in DIC*<sup>L</sup>* .

To justify DIC*<sup>L</sup>* , we will develop the large sample properties under some regularity conditions in the same manner as how  $DIC_1$  was justified by [Li et al.](#page-43-5) [\(2017](#page-43-5)). In particular, we will show that  $DIC_1$  can approximate AIC, and  $P_1$  can approximate *P*. Moreover, we will show that DIC*<sup>L</sup>* provides the asymptotically unbiased estimation of the KL divergence minus 2*C*.

Let  $\mathbf{y}^t:=(y_0,y_1,\ldots,y_t)$  for any  $0\leq t\leq n$  and  $l_t\left(\mathbf{y}^t,\pmb{\theta}\right)=\ln p(\mathbf{y}^t|\pmb{\theta})-\ln p(\mathbf{y}^{t-1}|\pmb{\theta})$  be the log-likelihood for the  $t$ th observation for any  $1\le t\le n.$  When there is no confusion, we suppress  $l_t\left(\bm{y}^t, \bm{\theta}\right)$  as  $l_t\left(\bm{\theta}\right)$  so that  $\ln p(\bm{y}|\bm{\theta})=\sum_{t=1}^n l_t\left(\bm{\theta}\right).^3$  $\ln p(\bm{y}|\bm{\theta})=\sum_{t=1}^n l_t\left(\bm{\theta}\right).^3$ And define  $l_t^{(j)}(\theta)$  to be the jth derivative of  $l_t(\theta)$  and  $l_t^{(j)}(\theta)=l_t(\theta)$  when  $j=0$ . The  $L_p$ -norm of a random matrix X is defined as  $\|X\|_p = \left(\sum_i\sum_j E\left|X_{ij}\right|^p\right)^{1/p}$ , and  $\|X\|$  denotes the Euclidean norm of the appropriate dimension. We introduce the following function

<span id="page-7-1"></span>
$$
\mathbf{s}(\mathbf{y}^t, \theta) := \frac{\partial \ln p(\mathbf{y}^t | \theta)}{\partial \theta} = \sum_{i=1}^t l_i^{(1)}(\theta), \ \mathbf{H}(\mathbf{y}^t, \theta) := \frac{\partial^2 \ln p(\mathbf{y}^t | \theta)}{\partial \theta \partial \theta'} = \sum_{i=1}^t l_i^{(2)}(\theta),
$$
\n
$$
\mathbf{s}_t(\theta) := l_t^{(1)}(\theta) = \mathbf{s}(\mathbf{y}^t, \theta) - \mathbf{s}(\mathbf{y}^{t-1}, \theta), \ \mathbf{H}_t(\theta) := l_t^{(2)}(\theta) = \mathbf{H}(\mathbf{y}^t, \theta) - \mathbf{H}(\mathbf{y}^{t-1}, \theta),
$$
\n
$$
\mathbf{B}_n(\theta) := \text{Var}\left[\frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \sum_{t=1}^n l_t^{(1)}(\theta)\right], \ \bar{\mathbf{H}}_n(\theta) := \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n \mathbf{H}_t(\theta),
$$
\n
$$
\bar{\mathbf{J}}_n(\theta) := \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n \mathbf{s}_t(\theta) \mathbf{s}_t(\theta)', \ \mathbf{H}_n(\theta) := \int \bar{\mathbf{H}}_n(\theta) \mathbf{g}(\mathbf{y}) \, \mathrm{d}\mathbf{y}, \ \mathbf{J}_n(\theta) = \int \bar{\mathbf{J}}_n(\theta) \mathbf{g}(\mathbf{y}) \, \mathrm{d}\mathbf{y}.
$$

In this paper, as in [Li et al.](#page-43-5) [\(2017](#page-43-5)), we impose the following regularity conditions.

<span id="page-7-3"></span>**Assumption 1.**  $\boldsymbol{\Theta} \subset \boldsymbol{R}^P$  is compact.

<span id="page-7-2"></span>**Assumption 2.**  $\{y_t\}_{t=1}^\infty$  satisfies the strong mixing condition with the mixing coefficient  $\alpha$   $(m)=0$   $\left(m^{\frac{-2r}{r-2}-\varepsilon}\right)$  for some  $\varepsilon > 0$  and  $r > 2$ .

<span id="page-7-4"></span>**Assumption 3.** For all *t*, *l<sup>t</sup>* (θ) satisfies the standard measurability and continuity condition, and the eight-times differentiability condition on  $F_{-\infty}^t \times \Theta$  where  $F_{-\infty}^t = \sigma$   $(y_t, y_{t-1}, \ldots)$ .

<span id="page-7-5"></span>**Assumption 4.** For  $j = 0, 1, 2$ , for any  $\theta$ ,  $\theta' \in \Theta$ ,  $\left\| \begin{matrix} f^{(j)}(\theta) - f^{(j)}_t(\theta') \end{matrix} \right\| \leq c_t^j(\mathbf{y}^t) \left\| \theta - \theta' \right\|$  in probability, where  $c_t^j(\mathbf{y}^t)$  is a  $\parallel$ positive random variable with  $\sup_t \left\|c^j_t\left(\mathbf{y}^t\right)\right\|_1 < \infty$  and  $\frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=1}^n \left(c^j_t\left(\mathbf{y}^t\right) - E\left(c^j_t\left(\mathbf{y}^t\right)\right)\right) \stackrel{p}{\to} 0.$ 

<span id="page-7-6"></span>**Assumption 5.** For  $j = 0, 1, ..., 8$ , there exists a function  $M_t(\mathbf{y}^t)$  such that for all  $\theta \in \Theta$ ,  $l_t^{(j)}(\theta)$  exists,  $\sup_{\theta \in \Theta} ||l_t^{(j)}(\theta)|| \le$  $M_t(\mathbf{y}^t)$ , and sup<sub>t</sub>  $\big\|M_t(\mathbf{y}^t)\big\|_{r+\delta} \leq M < \infty$  for some  $\delta > 0$ , where *r* is the same as that in [Assumption](#page-7-2) [2.](#page-7-2)

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>2</sup> To estimate DIC, DIC<sub>l</sub> and DIC<sub>M</sub>, one needs to estimate several population quantities. To ensure the sample counterparts of population quantities from MCMC draws converge, proper conditions are needed. For example, a sufficient condition, originally due to [Meyn and Tweedie](#page-43-18) [\(2012\)](#page-43-18), is the Harris ergodicity. For the sake of space, throughout this paper we assume MCMC draws are well-behaved and Harris ergodic.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>3</sup> In the definition of log-likelihood, we ignore the initial condition  $\ln p(y_0)$ . For weakly dependent data, the impact of the initial condition is asymptotically negligible.

<span id="page-8-0"></span>**Assumption 6.**  $\left\{l^{(j)}_t(\theta)\right\}$  is  $L_2$ -near epoch dependent with respect to  $\{y_t\}$  of size  $-1$  for  $0 \leqslant j \leqslant 1$  and  $-\frac{1}{2}$  for  $j=2$ uniformly on  $\varTheta.$ 

<span id="page-8-1"></span>**Assumption 7.** Let  $\theta_n^p$  be the pseudo-true value that minimizes the KL loss between the DGP and the candidate model

$$
\theta_n^p = \arg\min_{\theta \in \Theta} \frac{1}{n} \int \ln \frac{g(\mathbf{y})}{p(\mathbf{y}|\theta)} g(\mathbf{y}) \mathrm{d}\mathbf{y},
$$

where  $\{\pmb{\theta}_n^p\}$  is the sequence of minimizers interior to  $\bm{\varTheta}$  uniformly in  $n$  and  $\lim_{n\to\infty}\pmb{\theta}_n^p\in$  Int( $\bm{\varTheta}$ ). For all  $\varepsilon>0$ ,

<span id="page-8-3"></span>
$$
\lim_{n\to\infty}\sup\sup_{\Theta\setminus\mathcal{N}\left(\theta_{n}^{p},\varepsilon\right)}\frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=1}^{n}\left\{E\left[l_{t}\left(\theta\right)\right]-E\left[l_{t}\left(\theta_{n}^{p}\right)\right]\right\}<0,
$$
\n(18)

where  $N\left(\pmb{\theta}_{n}^{p},\varepsilon\right)$  is the open ball of radius  $\varepsilon$  around  $\pmb{\theta}_{n}^{p}.$ 

<span id="page-8-6"></span> ${\bf Assumption~8.}$  The sequence  $\{{\bf H}_n\left(\bm\theta_n^p\right)\}$  is negative definite and the sequence  $\{{\bf B}_n\left(\bm\theta_n^p\right)\}$  is positive definite, both uniformly in *n*.

<span id="page-8-5"></span>Assumption 9.  $H_n(\theta_n^p) + B_n(\theta_n^p) = o(1)$ .

<span id="page-8-4"></span> $A$ ssumption 10. The prior density  $p(\theta)$  is eight-times continuously differentiable,  $p(\theta^p_n)>0$  and  $\int \|\theta\|^2\,p(\theta) {\rm d}\theta<\infty.$ 

**Remark 3.1.** [Assumption](#page-7-3) [1](#page-7-3) is the compactness condition. [Assumptions](#page-7-2) [2](#page-7-2) and [6](#page-8-0) imply weak dependence in *y<sup>t</sup>* and *l<sup>t</sup>* . The first part of [Assumption](#page-7-4) [3](#page-7-4) is the continuity condition. [Assumption](#page-7-5) [4](#page-7-5) is the Lipschitz condition for *l<sup>t</sup>* first introduced in [Andrews](#page-42-1) [\(1987](#page-42-1)) to develop the uniform law of large numbers for dependent and heterogeneous stochastic processes. [Assumption](#page-8-1) [5](#page-7-6) **contains the dominance condition for** *l<sub>t</sub>.* **Assumption [7](#page-8-1) is the identification condition used in Gallan**t and [White](#page-43-19) [\(1988](#page-43-19)). These assumptions are well-known primitive conditions for developing the ML theory, namely consistency and asymptotic normality, for dependent and heterogeneous data; see, for example, [Gallant and White](#page-43-19) ([1988\)](#page-43-19) and [Wooldridge](#page-44-6) ([1994](#page-44-6)).

**Remark 3.2.** A measurable function of a mixing process is mixing if the function only depends on finite number of lagged values of the mixing process [\(Gallant and White,](#page-43-19) [1988\)](#page-43-19). In most latent variable models, however, the likelihood function and the score function depend on the distant past or future of the process. [Assumption](#page-8-0) [6](#page-8-0) is used to control the dependence of the function; see [Gallant and White](#page-43-19) ([1988](#page-43-19)), [Davidson](#page-43-20) [\(1992](#page-43-20), [1993](#page-43-21)), [de Jong](#page-43-22) ([1997](#page-43-22)).

**Remark 3.3.** The eight-times differentiability condition in [Assumption](#page-7-4) [3](#page-7-4) and the domination condition for up to the eighth derivative of *l<sup>t</sup>* in [Assumption](#page-7-6) [5](#page-7-6) are important to develop a high order stochastic Laplace expansion. In particular, as shown in [Kass et al.](#page-43-23) ([1990\)](#page-43-23), these two conditions, together with the well-known consistency condition for ML given by ([19\)](#page-8-2) below, are sufficient for developing the Laplace expansion. This consistency condition requires that, for any  $\varepsilon > 0$ , there exists  $K_1(\varepsilon) > 0$  such that

<span id="page-8-2"></span>
$$
\lim_{n\to\infty} \Pr\left(\sup_{\boldsymbol{\theta}\backslash N\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{n}^{p},\varepsilon\right)}\frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=1}^{n}\left[l_{t}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}\right)-l_{t}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{n}^{p}\right)\right]<-K_{1}\left(\varepsilon\right)\right)=1.
$$
\n(19)

Our [Assumption](#page-8-1) [7](#page-8-1) is clearly more primitive than the consistency condition [\(19\)](#page-8-2). In the following lemma, we show that [Assumptions](#page-7-3) [1](#page-7-3)[–7](#page-8-1), including the identification condition ([18](#page-8-3)), are sufficient to ensure [\(19\)](#page-8-2) as well as the concentration condition around the posterior mode given by [Chen](#page-43-24) ([1985\)](#page-43-24) and the concentration condition around the MLE given by [Kim](#page-43-25) ([1994](#page-43-25), [1998](#page-43-26)). Together with [Assumption](#page-8-4) [10](#page-8-4), the concentration condition suggests that the stochastic Laplace expansion can be applied to the posterior distribution and the asymptotic normality of posterior distribution can be established.

**Remark 3.4.** [Assumption](#page-8-5) [9](#page-8-5) gives the exact requirement for a good model. It generalizes the definition of "information matrix equality"; see [White](#page-44-7) [\(1996](#page-44-7)). It was used in [Li et al.](#page-43-5) ([2017](#page-43-5)) to show that AIC and DIC provide the asymptotically unbiased estimation of the KL divergence minus 2*C*. However, as we will show soon, [Assumption](#page-8-5) [9](#page-8-5) is not required to establish the asymptotic equivalence between DIC and AIC.

<span id="page-8-7"></span>**Remark 3.5.** [Assumption](#page-8-4) [10](#page-8-4) ensures the second moment of the prior is finite. As argued in [Geweke and Keane](#page-43-27) [\(2001](#page-43-27)), such a condition typically leads to a finite second moment of posterior. Moreover, it implies that the prior is negligible asymptotically.

**Lemma 3.[1](#page-7-3).** If *[Assumptions](#page-7-3)* 1–[7](#page-8-1) *hold true, then Eq.* ([19](#page-8-2)) *holds. Furthermore, if Assumptions* 1–7 *hold true, for any*  $\varepsilon > 0$ , *there exists*  $K_2(\varepsilon) > 0$  *such that* 

<span id="page-9-3"></span>
$$
\lim_{n \to \infty} \Pr\left(\sup_{\boldsymbol{\Theta} \backslash N(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}, \varepsilon)} \frac{1}{n} \left[ \sum_{t=1}^{n} l_t(\boldsymbol{\theta}) - \sum_{t=1}^{n} l_t(\boldsymbol{\theta}_n^p) \right] < -K_2(\varepsilon) \right) = 1. \tag{20}
$$

[Lemma](#page-9-0) [3.2](#page-9-0) gives a high order approximation to the posterior mean and the posterior variance based on a high order Laplace expansion. To apply the Laplace expansion, we need to fix more notations. For convenience of exposition, we let  $\overline{\mathbf{H}}_n^{(j)}$  $\mathcal{L}_{n}^{(j)}(\theta) = \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^{n} l_{t}^{(j)}(\theta)$  for  $j = 3, 4, 5$ . Let  $\pi(\theta) = \ln p(\theta)$ ,  $p^{(j)}(\theta)$ ,  $\pi^{(j)}(\theta)$  be the jth order derivatives of  $p(\theta)$ ,  $\pi(\theta)$  for  $j=1,2$ , and  $\hat{p}$ ,  $\hat{\pi}$ ,  $\hat{p}^{(j)}$  and  $\hat{\pi}^{(j)}$  be the values of functions  $p(\theta)$ ,  $\pi(\theta)$ ,  $p^{(j)}(\theta)$  and  $\pi^{(j)}(\theta)$  evaluated at  $\hat{\theta}(y)$ . When there is no confusion, we write  $\hat{\theta}(\mathbf{y})$  as  $\hat{\theta}$ .

<span id="page-9-0"></span>**Lemma 3.2.** Let Var( $\theta$ |**y**) = E  $[(\theta - \bar{\theta})(\theta - \bar{\theta})'$ |**y**] be the posterior variance of  $\theta$ . Under [Assumptions](#page-7-3) [1](#page-7-3)–[8](#page-8-6) and [10](#page-8-4), it can be *shown that*

$$
\bar{\theta} = \hat{\theta} + \frac{1}{n} B_1^1 + \frac{1}{n^2} (B_2^1 - B_3^1) + O_p\left(\frac{1}{n^3}\right),
$$
  
vec[Var(\theta|y)] =  $-\frac{1}{n} \nu e c \left(\bar{H}_n^{-1}(\hat{\theta})\right) + \frac{1}{n^2} (F_1 + F_2) + O_p\left(\frac{1}{n^3}\right),$ 

where  $B_1^1$  is defined in ([53](#page-25-0)),  $B_2^1$  defined in ([55\)](#page-26-0),  $B_3^1=B_1^1\times B_4^1$ ,  $B_4^1$  defined in [\(62](#page-28-0)),  $F_1$  defined in [\(76\)](#page-32-0),  $F_2$  defined in ([77](#page-33-0)) with vec *denoting the column-wise vectorization of a matrix.*

**Remark 3.6.** Under the different regularity conditions, the Bernstein–von Mises theorem states that the posterior distribution converges to a normal distribution with the MLE as its mean and the inverse of the second derivative of the negative log-likelihood function evaluated at the MLE as its variance. Based on the Bernstein–von Mises theorem, when the parameter is one-dimensional, [Ghosh and Ramamoorthi](#page-43-28) [\(2003](#page-43-28)) developed similar results with [Lemma](#page-9-0) [3.2](#page-9-0) for the iid case. In particular, [Ghosh and Ramamoorthi](#page-43-28) ([2003\)](#page-43-28) showed that

$$
\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} - \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} = o_p(n^{-1/2}), Var(\boldsymbol{\theta}|\mathbf{y}) + \frac{1}{n}\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}) = o_p(n^{-1}).
$$

Our [Lemma](#page-9-0) [3.2](#page-9-0) extends the results of [Ghosh and Ramamoorthi](#page-43-28) ([2003\)](#page-43-28) in three aspects: (1) to the weakly dependent case; (2) to the multi-dimensional case; (3) giving the exact order of the first and second moments of the difference between the posterior distribution and the asymptotic normal distribution. From [Lemma](#page-9-0) [3.2,](#page-9-0) we have

$$
\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} - \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} = O_p(n^{-1}), Var(\boldsymbol{\theta}|\mathbf{y}) + \frac{1}{n}\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}) = O_p(n^{-2}).
$$

Based on this lemma, we can obtain the exact order of the difference between DIC*<sup>L</sup>* and AIC as follows.

<span id="page-9-1"></span>**Theorem 3.1.** *Under [Assumptions](#page-7-3)* [1](#page-7-3)*–*[8](#page-8-6) *and* [10](#page-8-4)*, we have*

$$
P_L = P + \frac{1}{n}C_1 + \frac{1}{n}C_2 + O_p\left(\frac{1}{n^2}\right),
$$
  

$$
DIC_L = AIC + \frac{1}{n}D_1 + \frac{1}{n}D_2 + O_p\left(\frac{1}{n^2}\right),
$$

*where*

<span id="page-9-2"></span>
$$
C_1 = \frac{1}{2}C_{11} - \frac{1}{2}C_{12}, \quad C_2 = -C_{22},
$$
  
\n
$$
D_1 = C_{11} + \frac{5}{4}C_{12}, \quad D_2 = C_{21} - 2C_{22} - C_{23},
$$
  
\n
$$
C_{11} = \text{tr}\left[\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}) \otimes vec\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})\right)'\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{(4)}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})\right],
$$
  
\n
$$
C_{12} = vec\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})\right)'\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{(3)}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{(3)}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})'\,vec{\mathbf{H}}_n^{(4)}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})\right),
$$
  
\n
$$
C_{21} = \pi^{(1)}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})'\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{(3)}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})'\,vec{\mathbf{H}}_n^{(3)}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})'
$$
  
\n
$$
C_{22} = \text{tr}\left[\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})\pi^{(2)}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})\right], \quad C_{23} = \pi^{(1)}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})'\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})\pi^{(1)}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}).
$$

**Corollary 3.2.** *Under [Assumptions](#page-7-3)* [1](#page-7-3)*–*[10](#page-8-4)*, we have*

 $E_{\mathbf{y}}\left\{2 \times \textit{KL}\left[g\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}\right), p\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep} | \bar{\theta}\right)\right]\right\} = 2C + E_{\mathbf{y}}\left[-2 \ln p\left(\mathbf{y} | \bar{\theta}\right) + 2P_{L}\right] + o(1)$  $= 2C + E_v (DIC_l) + o(1).$ 

**Remark 3.7.** In Equation (15) on Page 590, [Spiegelhalter et al.](#page-44-0) ([2002](#page-44-0)) obtained the expression for *P<sup>L</sup>* and claimed that  $P_L$  approximates  $P_D$  in DIC<sub>1</sub> and *P* in AIC. Unfortunately, to the best of our knowledge,  $P_L$  has never been implemented in practice, and WinBUGS does not report  $P_L$ . Moreover, the conditions under which  $P_L\approx P_D\approx P$  holds true were not specified in [Spiegelhalter et al.](#page-44-0) ([2002\)](#page-44-0). The order of the approximation error was unknown. According to [Theorem](#page-9-1) [3.1](#page-9-1), the difference between *P* and *P<sup>L</sup>* and that between AIC and DIC*<sup>L</sup>* are both *Op*(*n* −1 ). Furthermore, combined with Lemma 3.3 in [Li et al.](#page-43-5) [\(2017](#page-43-5)), we can show that the approximation error between  $P_D$  and  $P_L$  and that between DIC<sub>1</sub> and DIC<sub>L</sub> are both  $O_p(n^{-1})$ .

**Remark 3.8.** Without [Assumption](#page-8-5) [9,](#page-8-5) [Theorem](#page-9-1) [3.1](#page-9-1) clearly shows that the difference between AIC and DIC*<sup>L</sup>* is *Op*(*n* −1 ). For this reason, both DIC<sub>L</sub> and DIC<sub>1</sub> can be regarded as the Bayesian version of AIC. When the prior is informative and the sample size is finite, DIC*<sup>L</sup>* may give a different value from AIC. Like DIC1, an important feature of DIC*<sup>L</sup>* is that it provides an approach to measure the model complexity when the informative prior is available. According to [Theorem](#page-9-1) [3.1,](#page-9-1) an alternative version of DIC, with or without a latent variable, is  $D(\bar{\theta})+2P$ . In this case, the penalty term does not take into account the prior information.

**Remark 3.9.** [Corollary](#page-9-2) [3.2](#page-9-2) is the direct result of [Theorem](#page-9-1) [3.1](#page-9-1) and Theorem 3.1 of [Li et al.](#page-43-5) [\(2017](#page-43-5)). Since the frequentist justification of DIC and AIC needs [Assumption](#page-8-5) [9](#page-8-5), it is also needed to justify DIC*<sup>L</sup>* as in [Corollary](#page-9-2) [3.2](#page-9-2). As DIC1, DIC*<sup>L</sup>* is an asymptotically unbiased estimator of the expected KL divergence minus 2C. Hence, DIC<sub>I</sub> selects a model that minimizes the expected KL divergence between the DGP and the plug-in predictive distribution. The smaller the value of DIC*<sup>L</sup>* , the better the predictive performance of the candidate latent variable model.

**Remark 3.10.** From the discussion above, DIC<sub>1</sub> and DIC<sub>I</sub> share the same asymptotic properties. However, as explained before, there is an important difference between DIC<sub>1</sub> and DIC<sub>L</sub>, that is, the penalty term takes a different expression. It is this difference that makes DIC<sub>L</sub> easier to compute from MCMC output. To compute  $P_{D,1}$  in DIC<sub>1</sub>, one has to evaluate  $\frac{1}{J}\sum_{j=1}^{J} \ln p(\mathbf{y}|\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(j)})$  and hence calculate  $p(\mathbf{y}|\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(j)})$  for *J* times. For closed-form, the computational cost is high. However, to compute *P<sup>L</sup>* in DIC*<sup>L</sup>* , one needs to evaluate the second derivative of observed-data likelihood only once, which is computationally much less expensive. In Section [4.3](#page-17-0), we will introduce some efficient algorithms to evaluate  $D\left(\bar{\theta}\right)$  and  $\mathbf{I}\left(\bar{\theta}\right)$ .

**Remark 3.11.** In the context of latent variable models, while  $DIC<sub>7</sub>$  is trivial to calculate but cannot be justified,  $DIC<sub>1</sub>$ is justified but hard to compute. DIC*<sup>L</sup>* solves this dilemma because it is justified and inexpensive to compute. The corresponding deviance is based on the observed-data likelihood function and the latent variables are not treated as parameters. It is important to point out that DIC*<sup>L</sup>* is computed from MCMC output. While DIC*<sup>L</sup>* does not treat latent variables as parameters, MCMC output may be obtained based on the data augmentation technique without affecting the asymptotic justification of DIC*<sup>L</sup>* . Returning to the Clark model, with the same setting as before, we get *P<sup>L</sup>* = 1.75 for Model 1 and  $P_L = 1.80$  for Model 2. There is no significant difference between them. Moreover, these two values are close to 2, which is the actual number of parameters in the model. This result is what we expect given that the vague priors are used. The small difference between  $P_l$  and  $P$  arises due to the simulation error and the priors.

## *3.4. Computing DIC<sup>L</sup> for latent variable models*

To calculate DIC*<sup>L</sup>* , one needs to calculate *p*(**y**|θ) and its derivatives with respect to θ (but there is no need to optimize *p*(**y**|θ)). Since there is no analytical expression for *p*(**y**|θ) for many latent variable models, in this section, we show how to use the EM algorithm, the Kalman filter, and the particle filters to calculate  $p(y|\theta)$  and its derivatives with respect to  $\theta$ .

#### *3.4.1. Computing DIC<sup>L</sup> by the EM algorithm*

In this subsection, we show how the EM algorithm may be used to evaluate  $p(\mathbf{y}|\bar{\theta})$ , the second derivative of the observed-data likelihood function, and hence DIC*<sup>L</sup>* for the latent variable models. The EM algorithm is a powerful tool to deal with latent variable models. Instead of maximizing the observed-data likelihood function, the EM algorithm maximizes the so-called  $Q$  function given by

$$
\mathcal{Q}(\boldsymbol{\theta}|\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(r)}) = E_{\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(r)}}\{\mathcal{L}_c(\mathbf{y},\mathbf{z}|\boldsymbol{\theta})|\mathbf{y},\boldsymbol{\theta}^{(r)}\},\tag{21}
$$

where  $\mathcal{L}_c(\mathbf{y},\mathbf{z}|\theta) := \ln p(\mathbf{y},\mathbf{z}|\theta)$  is the complete-data likelihood function. The Q function is the conditional expectation of  $\mathcal{L}_c(y,z|\theta)$  with respect to the conditional distribution  $p(z|y,\theta^{(r)})$  where  $\theta^{(r)}$  is a current fit of the parameter. The EM algorithm consists of two steps: the *expectation* (E) step and the *maximization* (M) step. The E-step evaluates  $Q(\theta | \theta^{(r)})$ .

The M-step determines a  $\theta^{(r)}$  that maximizes  $\mathcal{Q}(\theta|\theta^{(r)})$ . Under some mild regularity conditions, for large enough  $r$ ,  $\{\theta^{(r)}\}$ obtained from the EM algorithm is the MLE,  $\hat{\theta}$ . For more details about the EM algorithm, see [Dempster et al.](#page-43-29) ([1977\)](#page-43-29).

Although the EM algorithm is a good approach to dealing with latent variable models, the numerical optimization in the M-step is often unstable. Not surprisingly, the EM algorithm has been less popular to estimate latent variables models compared with MCMC techniques. However, we will show that, without numerical optimizations in the M-step, the theoretical properties of the EM algorithm facilitate the computation of DIC*<sup>L</sup>* for latent variable models.

It is noted that for any  $\theta$  and  $\theta^*$  in  $\Theta$ , let  $\mathcal{H}(\theta|\theta^*) = \int \ln p(\mathbf{z}|\mathbf{y}, \theta)p(\mathbf{z}|\mathbf{y}, \theta^*)d\mathbf{z}$ , the so-called  $\mathcal{H}$  function in the EM algorithm. It was shown in that

$$
\ln p(\mathbf{y}|\boldsymbol{\theta}) = \mathcal{Q}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}|\boldsymbol{\theta}^*\right) - \mathcal{H}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}|\boldsymbol{\theta}^*\right).
$$

Hence,  $\ln p(\mathbf{y} | \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}})$  may be obtained as

<span id="page-11-0"></span>
$$
\ln p(\mathbf{y}|\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}) = \mathcal{Q}(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}|\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}) - \mathcal{H}(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}|\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}). \tag{22}
$$

It can be seen that even when  $\mathcal{Q}(\bar{\bm{\theta}}|\bar{\bm{\theta}})$  is not available in closed form, it is easy to evaluate from MCMC output because

$$
\mathcal{Q}(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}|\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}) = \int \ln p(\mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z}|\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}) p(\mathbf{z}|\mathbf{y}, \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}) d\mathbf{z} \approx \frac{1}{M} \sum_{m=1}^{M} \ln p(\mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z}^{(m)}|\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}),
$$

where  $\{\mathbf{z}^{(m)}\}_{m=1}^M$  are drawn from the posterior distribution  $p(\mathbf{z}|\mathbf{y},\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}})$ .

For the second term in [\(22\)](#page-11-0), if  $p(z|y, \bar{\theta})$  is a standard distribution,  $H(\bar{\theta}|\bar{\theta})$  can be easily evaluated from MCMC output as

$$
\mathcal{H}(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}|\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}) = \int \ln p(\mathbf{z}|\mathbf{y}, \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}) p(\mathbf{z}|\mathbf{y}, \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}) d\mathbf{z} \approx \frac{1}{M} \sum_{m=1}^{M} \ln p(\mathbf{z}^{(m)}|\mathbf{y}, \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}).
$$

However, if  $p(\mathbf{z}|\mathbf{y},\bar{\pmb{\theta}})$  is not a standard distribution, an alternative approach has to be used, depending on the specific model in consideration. We now consider two situations.

First, if the complete-data ( $y_i$ ,  $z_i$ ) are independent when  $i\neq j$ , and  $z_i$  is low-dimensional, say  $\leq$  5, then a nonparametric approach may be used to approximate  $p(\mathbf{z}|\mathbf{y}, \theta)$ . Note that

$$
\mathcal{H}(\boldsymbol{\theta}|\boldsymbol{\theta}) = \int \ln p(\mathbf{z}|\mathbf{y}, \boldsymbol{\theta}) \pi(\mathbf{z}|\mathbf{y}, \boldsymbol{\theta}) d\mathbf{z} = \sum_{i=1}^n \int \ln p(\mathbf{z}_i|\mathbf{y}_i, \boldsymbol{\theta}) \pi(\mathbf{z}_i|\mathbf{y}, \boldsymbol{\theta}) d\mathbf{z}_i = \sum_{i=1}^n \mathcal{H}_i(\boldsymbol{\theta}|\boldsymbol{\theta}).
$$

Computation of H*i*(θ|θ) requires an analytic approximation to *p*(**z***<sup>i</sup>* |**y***i*, θ) via a nonparametric method. In particular, MCMC allows one to draw some effective samples from *p* (**z***<sup>i</sup>* |**y***i*, θ). Using these random samples, one can then use nonparametric techniques such as the kernel-based methods to approximate *p* (**z***<sup>i</sup>* |**y***i*, θ). In a recent study, [Ibrahim et al.](#page-43-30) ([2008\)](#page-43-30) suggested using a truncated Hermite expansion to approximate  $p(\mathbf{z}_i | \mathbf{y}_i, \boldsymbol{\theta})$ .

As a simple illustration, we apply this method to the Clark model. When the Gaussian kernel method is used, we get  $\ln p(\mathbf{y}|\bar{\theta}) = -1448.97$ , DIC<sub>L</sub> = 2901.46 for Model 1 and  $\ln p(\mathbf{y}|\bar{\theta}) = -1449.41$ , DIC<sub>L</sub> = 2902.42 for Model 2. These two sets of numbers are nearly identical. However, if the latent variable models are regarded as parameters, we get  $DIC<sub>7</sub> = 2884.37$ for Model 1 and  $DIC_7 = 2852.85$  for Model 2. The highly distinctive difference between them suggests that  $DIC_7$  is not a reliable model selection criterion for the model. Note that  $DIC<sub>1</sub>$  is very difficult to compute in this case.

Second, for some latent variable models, the latent variables **z** follow a multivariate normal distribution, and the observed variables **y** are independent conditional on **z**. This class of models is referred to as the Gaussian latent variable models in the literature. In economics and finance, many latent variable models belong to this class of models, including dynamic linear models, dynamic factor models, various forms of stochastic volatility models, and credit risk models. In these models, the observed-data likelihood is non-Gaussian but has a Gaussian flavor in the sense that the posterior distribution,  $p(\mathbf{z}|\mathbf{v}, \theta)$ , may be expressed as,

$$
p(\mathbf{z}|\mathbf{y}, \theta) \propto \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\mathbf{z}'V(\theta)\mathbf{z} + \sum_{i=1}^n \ln p(\mathbf{y}_i|\mathbf{z}_i, \theta)\right).
$$

[Rue et al.](#page-44-8) ([2004](#page-44-8)) and [Rue et al.](#page-43-31) [\(2009](#page-43-31)) showed that this type of posterior distribution can be well approximated by a Gaussian distribution via the Laplace approximation, that is,

$$
p(\mathbf{z}|\mathbf{y}, \boldsymbol{\theta}) \propto \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\mathbf{z}'(V(\boldsymbol{\theta}) + \text{diag}(\mathbf{c}))\mathbf{z}\right),
$$

where  $\bf{c}$  comes from the second-order term in the Taylor expansion of  $\sum_{i=1}^n\ln p(\bf{y}_i|\bf{z}_i)$  at the mode of  $p(\bf{z}|\bf{y},\bf{\theta}).$  The Laplace approximation may be employed to compute  $H(\bar{\theta}|\bar{\theta})$ . After  $p(y|\bar{\theta})$  is obtained, it is easy to obtain  $D(\bar{\theta})$ . It is important to point out that the numerical evaluation of  $p(y|\vec{\theta})$  is needed only once, that is, at the posterior mean.

To compute *P<sup>L</sup>* , we have to calculate the second derivative of the observed-data likelihood function in *P<sup>L</sup>* . Under the mild regularity condition, [Louis](#page-43-32) [\(1982\)](#page-43-32) showed that this second derivative may be expressed as:

$$
\mathbf{I}(\theta) = -\frac{\partial^2 \mathcal{L}_o(\mathbf{y}|\theta)}{\partial \theta \partial \theta'} = E_{\mathbf{z}|\mathbf{y},\theta} \left\{ -\frac{\partial^2 \mathcal{L}_c(\mathbf{x}|\theta)}{\partial \theta \partial \theta'} \right\} - Var_{\mathbf{z}|\mathbf{y},\theta} \left\{ S(\mathbf{x}|\theta) \right\}
$$
\n
$$
= E_{\mathbf{z}|\mathbf{y},\theta} \left\{ -\frac{\partial^2 \mathcal{L}_c(\mathbf{x}|\theta)}{\partial \theta \partial \theta'} - S(\mathbf{x}|\theta)S(\mathbf{x}|\theta') \right\} + E_{\mathbf{z}|\mathbf{y},\theta} \left\{ S(\mathbf{x}|\theta) \right\} E_{\mathbf{z}|\mathbf{y},\theta} \left\{ S(\mathbf{x}|\theta) \right\}',
$$
\n(23)

where  $S(x|\theta) = \partial \mathcal{L}_c(x|\theta)/\partial \theta$  and all the expectations are taken with respect to the conditional distribution of **z** given **y** and  $\theta$ .

If  $\mathcal Q$  function has an analytical expression, [Oakes](#page-43-33) [\(1999\)](#page-43-33) showed that the second derivative has an equivalent expression

$$
\mathbf{I}(\boldsymbol{\theta}) = -\frac{\partial^2 \mathcal{L}_o(\mathbf{y}|\boldsymbol{\theta})}{\partial \boldsymbol{\theta} \partial \boldsymbol{\theta}'} = \left\{ -\frac{\partial^2 \mathcal{Q}(\boldsymbol{\theta}|\boldsymbol{\theta}^*)}{\partial \boldsymbol{\theta} \partial \boldsymbol{\theta}'} - \frac{\partial^2 \mathcal{Q}(\boldsymbol{\theta}|\boldsymbol{\theta}^*)}{\partial \boldsymbol{\theta} \partial \boldsymbol{\theta}^{*'}} \right\}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}^* = \boldsymbol{\theta}}.
$$
\n(24)

If the analytical  $\mathcal Q$  function not available, we may approximate the second derivatives by,

$$
E_{\mathbf{z}|\mathbf{y},\theta} \left\{ -\frac{\partial^2 \mathcal{L}_c(\mathbf{x}|\boldsymbol{\theta})}{\partial \theta \partial \theta} - S(\mathbf{x}|\boldsymbol{\theta})S(\mathbf{x}|\boldsymbol{\theta})' \right\},
$$
  

$$
\approx -\frac{1}{M} \sum_{m=1}^{M} \left\{ \frac{\partial^2 \mathcal{L}_c(\mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z}^{(m)}|\boldsymbol{\theta})}{\partial \theta \partial \theta} + S(\mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z}^{(m)}|\boldsymbol{\theta})S(\mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z}^{(m)}|\boldsymbol{\theta})' \right\},
$$
  

$$
E_{\mathbf{z}|\mathbf{y},\theta} \{ S(\mathbf{x}|\boldsymbol{\theta}) \} \approx \frac{1}{M} \sum_{m=1}^{M} S(\mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z}^{(m)}|\boldsymbol{\theta}),
$$

where  $\{ {\bf z}^{(m)},\, m=1,2,\ldots ,M \}$  are random observations drawn from  $p({\bf z}|{\bf y},\boldsymbol{\theta})$ .

Although the EM algorithm is a very general approach to analyzing latent variable models, it is very cumbersome to deal with dynamic latent variable models, such as state-space models, because we have to compute the derivatives recursively ([Doucet and Shephard](#page-43-34), [2012](#page-43-34)). Alternatively, one can compute DIC*<sup>L</sup>* using the Kalman filter and particle filters.

## *3.4.2. Computing DIC<sup>L</sup> by the Kalman filter*

In economics, many time series models can be represented by a linear Gaussian state-space form. The Kalman filter is an efficient recursive method for computing the optimal linear forecasts in such models. It also gives the exact likelihood function of the model. Here, we only present the basic idea of the Kalman filter for analyzing linear state-space models. One may refer to [Harvey](#page-43-35) ([1989](#page-43-35)) for the detailed textbook treatment.

Consider a general linear state-space model,

$$
z_t = Tz_{t-1} + R\varepsilon_t, y_t = D + Cz_t + \xi_t,
$$

where  $\varepsilon_t \sim N(0, Q)$ ,  $\xi_t \sim N(0, H)$ , T is  $n_s \times n_s$ , R is  $n_s \times n_e$ , D is  $n \times 1$ , C is  $n \times n_s$ , Q is  $n_e \times n_e$ , H is  $n \times n$ . These six coefficient matrices are functions of a vector of parameters  $\theta$  which is  $n_q \times 1$ .

Let  $z_t^s = E(z_t|\mathbf{y}^s)$ ,  $\Sigma_t^s = E\{(z_t - z_t^s) (z_t - z_t^s)' |\mathbf{y}^s\}$ . With the initial conditions,  $z_0^0$  and  $\Sigma_0^0$ , for  $t = 1, 2, ..., n$ , the Kalman filter recursively implements the following steps

$$
z_t^{t-1} = T z_{t-1}^{t-1}, \, \Sigma_t^{t-1} = T \Sigma_{t-1}^{t-1} T' + R Q R',
$$

and

$$
z_t^t = z_t^{t-1} + K_t (y_t - D - C z_t^{t-1}), \, \Sigma_t^t = [I_{n_s} - K_t C] \Sigma_t^{t-1},
$$

where

$$
K_t = \Sigma_t^{t-1} C' \left[ C \Sigma_t^{t-1} C' + H \right]^{-1}.
$$

The observed-data log-likelihood is given by

$$
\ln p(\mathbf{y}|\boldsymbol{\theta}) = -\sum_{t=1}^{n} \left[ \frac{n}{2} \ln 2\pi + \frac{1}{2} \ln |F_t| + \frac{1}{2} (y_t - D - C z_t^{t-1})' F_t^{-1} (y_t - D - C z_t^{t-1}) \right]
$$
  
= 
$$
- \sum_{t=1}^{n} \left[ \frac{n}{2} \ln 2\pi + \frac{1}{2} \ln |F_t| + \frac{1}{2} \omega_t' F_t^{-1} \omega_t \right],
$$

where  $F_t=CP_t^{t-1}C'+H$ ,  $\omega_t=y_t-D-Cz_t^{t-1}$ . Clearly,  $\ln p(y|\bm{\theta})$  has to be calculated recursively since  $F_t$  and  $z_t^{t-1}$  are only available recursively. Similarly, *st*(θ) and *ht*(θ) has to be computed recursively. To calculate *st*(θ) and *ht*(θ), we need to calculate the first and second-order derivatives of  $|F_t|$ ,  $\omega'_t F_t^{-1} \omega_t$  recursively. For details, one can refer to [Iskrev](#page-43-36) [\(2008\)](#page-43-36).

## *3.4.3. Computing DIC<sup>L</sup> by particle filters*

<span id="page-13-0"></span>In practice, the nonlinear non-Gaussian state-space models have been widely used in empirical works, but they cannot be analyzed using the Kalman filter. Instead, one can use another class of recursive filtering algorithms known as particle filters. We only present the basic idea of particle filters here and refer the reader to recent review papers on particle filters by [Doucet and Johansen](#page-43-37) [\(2009\)](#page-43-37) and [Creal](#page-43-38) ([2012\)](#page-43-38) for greater details.

Let  $z_{t+1}|z_t \sim f\left(z_{t+1}|z_t,\pmb{\theta}\right)$  and  $y_t|z_t \sim g\left(y_t|z_t,\pmb{\theta}\right)$ . Let the initial density of  $z$  be  $\mu\left(z|\pmb{\theta}\right)$ . The joint density of  $\left(\mathbf{z}^t,\mathbf{y}^t\right)$  is

$$
p\left(\mathbf{z}^t, \mathbf{y}^t | \boldsymbol{\theta}\right) = \mu\left(z_1 | \boldsymbol{\theta}\right) \prod_{k=2}^t f\left(z_k | z_{k-1}, \boldsymbol{\theta}\right) \prod_{k=1}^t g\left(y_k | z_k, \boldsymbol{\theta}\right),
$$

and hence,

$$
p\left(\mathbf{y}^t|\boldsymbol{\theta}\right) = \int p\left(\mathbf{z}^t, \mathbf{y}^t|\boldsymbol{\theta}\right) d\mathbf{z}^t.
$$

For nonlinear non-Gaussian state-space models, neither  $p\left(\mathbf{z}^t | \mathbf{y}^t, \theta\right)$  nor  $p\left(\mathbf{y}^t | \theta\right)$  are available in closed-form. The goal here is to calculate  $p\left(\mathbf{z}^t | \mathbf{y}^t, \pmb{\theta}\right)$ ,  $p\left(\mathbf{y}^t | \pmb{\theta}\right)$ , and  $\mathbf{s}(\mathbf{y}^t, \pmb{\theta})$  sequentially for  $t=1,\ldots,n.$  The idea of using particle filters is to approximate  $p\left(\mathbf{z}^t | \mathbf{y}^t, \theta\right)$ d $\mathbf{z}^t$  by its empirical measure. An example of particle filters is the Sequential Important Sampling and Resampling (SISR) algorithm which iterates the following step for  $i = 1, \ldots, N$ ,

,

**Step 1**: At  $t = 1, z_1^{(i)} \sim \mu(\cdot)$ ,

$$
w_1\left(\mathbf{z}^{1(i)}\right) = \frac{\mu\left(z_1^{(i)} | \theta\right) g\left(y_1 | z_1^{(i)}, \theta\right)}{q_1\left(z_1^{(i)}\right)}, \ \ W_1^{(i)} = \frac{w_1\left(\mathbf{z}^{1(i)}\right)}{\sum_{i=1}^N w_1\left(\mathbf{z}^{1(i)}\right)},
$$

 $\mathbf{z}^{1(i)} = z_1^{(i)}$ . Resample  $\left(W_1^{(i)}, \mathbf{z}^{1(i)}\right)$  to obtain new particles  $\left(\frac{1}{N}, \widetilde{\mathbf{z}}^{1(i)}\right)$ . **Step 2:** At  $t \ge 2$ ,  $z_t^{(i)} \sim q_n(\cdot | \tilde{\mathbf{z}}^{t-1(i)})$ ,

$$
w_t\left(\mathbf{z}^{t(i)}\right) = \frac{f\left(z_t^{(i)}|\widetilde{z}_{t-1}^{(i)}, \boldsymbol{\theta}\right)g\left(y_t|\widetilde{z}_t^{(i)}, \boldsymbol{\theta}\right)}{q_t\left(z_t^{(i)}|\widetilde{\mathbf{z}}^{t-1(i)}\right)}, \ \ W_t^{(i)} = \frac{w_t\left(\mathbf{z}^{t(i)}\right)}{\sum_{i=1}^N w_t\left(\mathbf{z}^{t(i)}\right)},
$$

 $\mathbf{z}^{t(i)} = (\widetilde{\mathbf{z}}^{t-1(i)}, z_t^{(i)})$ . Resample  $(W_t^{(i)}, \mathbf{z}^{t(i)})$  to obtain new particles  $(\frac{1}{N}, \widetilde{\mathbf{z}}^{t(i)})$ .  ${\bf Step~3:}$  Approximate the conditional distribution  $p_{\theta}\left({\rm d}{\bf z}^t|{\bf y}^t, \theta\right)$  by its empirical measure

$$
\hat{p} \left(\mathrm{d}\mathbf{z}^t | \mathbf{y}^t, \boldsymbol{\theta}\right) = \sum_{i=1}^N W_t^{(i)} \delta_{\mathbf{z}^{t(i)}} \left(\mathrm{d}\mathbf{z}^t\right) \text{ or } \widetilde{p}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \left(\mathrm{d}\mathbf{z}^t | \mathbf{y}^t, \boldsymbol{\theta}\right) = \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^N \delta_{\widetilde{\mathbf{z}}^{t(i)}} \left(\mathrm{d}\mathbf{z}^t\right)
$$

and

$$
\hat{p}\left(y_t|\mathbf{y}^{t-1},\boldsymbol{\theta}\right)=\frac{1}{N}\sum_{i=1}^N w_t\left(\mathbf{z}^{t(i)}\right),
$$

where *N* is the number of particles and  $q_t$  ( $\cdot$ | $\cdot$ ) is the proposal density.

With the empirical measure  $\left\{\hat{p}\left(\mathrm{d}{\bf z}^t|{\bf y}^t, \theta\right)\right\}_{t=1:n}$ , we can approximate the integral

$$
I_t = \int \varphi_t \left( \mathbf{z}^t \right) p\left( \mathbf{z}^t | \mathbf{y}^t, \boldsymbol{\theta} \right) d\mathbf{z}^t,
$$

by

$$
\hat{l}_t = \int \varphi_t \left( \mathbf{z}^t \right) \hat{p} \left( d\mathbf{z}^t | \mathbf{y}^t, \boldsymbol{\theta} \right) = \sum_{i=1}^N W_t^{(i)} \varphi_t \left( \mathbf{z}^{t(i)} \right),
$$

for  $t=1,\ldots,n,$  where  $\varphi_t\left(\mathbf{z}^t\right)$  is the target function. If  $\varphi_t\left(\mathbf{z}^t\right)=\partial\ln p\left(\mathbf{z}^t,\mathbf{y}^t|\pmb{\theta}\right)/\partial\pmb{\theta},$  then

$$
\mathbf{s}(\mathbf{y}^t, \theta) = \int \frac{\partial \ln p\left(\mathbf{z}_t, \mathbf{y}^t | \theta\right)}{\partial \theta} p\left(\mathbf{z}_t | \mathbf{y}^t, \theta\right) d\mathbf{z}_t, -\mathbf{H}(\mathbf{y}^t, \theta) = \mathbf{s}(\mathbf{y}^t, \theta) \mathbf{s}(\mathbf{y}^t, \theta)' - \frac{\partial^2 p\left(\mathbf{y}^t | \theta\right)/\partial \theta \partial \theta'}{p\left(\mathbf{y}^t | \theta\right)}
$$

where

$$
\frac{\partial^2 p(\mathbf{y}^t|\boldsymbol{\theta})/\partial \boldsymbol{\theta} \partial \boldsymbol{\theta}'}{p(\mathbf{y}^t|\boldsymbol{\theta})} = \int \frac{\partial \ln p(\mathbf{z}_t, \mathbf{y}^t|\boldsymbol{\theta})}{\partial \boldsymbol{\theta}} \frac{\partial \ln p(\mathbf{z}_t, \mathbf{y}^t|\boldsymbol{\theta})'}{\partial \boldsymbol{\theta}'} p(\mathbf{z}_t|\mathbf{y}^t, \boldsymbol{\theta}) d\mathbf{z}_t
$$

$$
+ \int \frac{\partial^2 \ln p(\mathbf{z}_t, \mathbf{y}^t|\boldsymbol{\theta})}{\partial \boldsymbol{\theta} \partial \boldsymbol{\theta}'} p(\mathbf{z}_t|\mathbf{y}^t, \boldsymbol{\theta}) d\mathbf{z}_t,
$$

by the Fisher and Louis identities that are based only on the marginal density  $p\left(\mathbf{z}_t\vert\mathbf{y}^t,\pmb{\theta}\right)$  [\(Poyiadjis et al.](#page-43-39), [2011](#page-43-39)). Therefore,  $s(y^t, \pmb{\theta})$  and  $H(y^t, \pmb{\theta})$  can be obtained recursively.

Based on different proposal densities  $q_t(\cdot|\cdot)$ , different particle filtering algorithms have been proposed in the literature, including the bootstrap particle filters of [Gordon et al.](#page-43-40) [\(1993](#page-43-40)) and the auxiliary particle filters of [Pitt and Shephard](#page-43-41) [\(1999](#page-43-41)). In this paper, we use the auxiliary particle filters to compute  $s(y^t, \theta)$ ,  $H(y^t, \theta)$ . The details about how to compute them via particle filters can be found in [Poyiadjis et al.](#page-43-39) [\(2011](#page-43-39)) and [Doucet and Shephard](#page-43-34) [\(2012](#page-43-34)).

## **4. DIC for misspecified models**

<span id="page-14-0"></span>According to [Assumption](#page-8-5) [9](#page-8-5), DIC*<sup>L</sup>* requires all candidate models to be good approximations to DGP. The same requirement is needed for AIC and  $DIC_1$ . In most applications, however, this assumption is too strong. Quoting [Box](#page-43-42) [\(1976](#page-43-42)), "all models are wrong, but some are useful." In this section, following a referee's suggestion, we relax this assumption and introduce a new DIC (namely DIC*<sup>M</sup>* ) to compare misspecified models, namely, when all candidate models violate [Assumption](#page-8-5) [9](#page-8-5). We first develop DIC*<sup>M</sup>* and obtain its asymptotic properties. Following a suggestion of another referee, we then discuss BFs and BIC in the context of misspecified models. Finally, we design a simple simulation study to compare the performance of alternative model selection criteria.

## *4.1. DIC<sup>M</sup> for misspecified models*

The asymptotic justification of AIC and  $DIC<sub>1</sub>$  requires all candidate models to be correctly specified or good approximations to the DGP. If a candidate model is misspecified, the expected KL divergence between the DGP and  $p\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}|\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(\mathbf{y})\right)$ can be expressed as

<span id="page-14-1"></span>
$$
E_{\mathbf{y}}\left\{2 \times KL\left[g\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}\right), p\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}|\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(\mathbf{y})\right)\right]\right\} = 2C + E_{\mathbf{y}}E_{\mathbf{y}_{rep}}\left[-2\ln p\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}|\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(\mathbf{y})\right)\right]
$$
  
= 2C + E\_{\mathbf{y}}\left\{-2\ln p\left(\mathbf{y}|\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(\mathbf{y})\right) - 2\mathbf{tr}\left\{\mathbf{B}\_{n}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}\_{n}^{p}\right)\mathbf{H}\_{n}^{-1}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}\_{n}^{p}\right)\right\}\right\} + o(1), (25)

where  $\hat{\theta}(y)$  denotes the MLE of  $\theta$  in the misspecified model. As before, we write  $\hat{\theta}(y)$  as  $\hat{\theta}$ . Note the difference between  $(25)$  $(25)$  and  $(4)$  $(4)$  for AIC. Based on  $(25)$ , TIC is defined as

<span id="page-14-2"></span>
$$
TIC = -2 \ln p \left( \mathbf{y} | \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) + 2P_T, \tag{26}
$$

where  $P_T$  is a consistent estimator of  $-$ tr  $\{ {\bf B}_n \left( \theta_n^p \right) \bf{H}_n^{-1} \left( \theta_n^p \right) \}$ . TIC is an asymptotically unbiased estimator of the expected KL divergence minus 2*C* when a candidate model is misspecified. Eq. [\(26\)](#page-14-2) was first proposed by [Takeuchi](#page-44-2) ([1976\)](#page-44-2) for independent data. [Stone](#page-44-9) ([1977\)](#page-44-9) derived the same results from the viewpoint of cross-validation. Clearly, finding a consistent estimator for  $-\mathbf{tr}\left\{\mathbf{B}_n\left(\pmb{\theta}_n^p\right)\mathbf{H}_n^{-1}\left(\pmb{\theta}_n^p\right)\right\}$  is critical to TIC.

Under [Assumptions](#page-7-3) [1](#page-7-3)[–8,](#page-8-6)  $\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1}\left(\hat{\pmb{\theta}}\right)$  is a consistent estimator for  $\mathbf{H}_n^{-1}\left(\pmb{\theta}_n^p\right)$ , that is,

<span id="page-14-4"></span>
$$
\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}) - \mathbf{H}_n^{-1}(\boldsymbol{\theta}_n^p) \stackrel{p}{\to} 0. \tag{27}
$$

[Newey and West](#page-43-43) [\(1987](#page-43-43)) proposed a heteroskedasticity and autocorrelation consistent (HAC) estimator of  ${\bf B}_n\left(\bm\theta_n^p\right)$  defined by

$$
\bar{\boldsymbol{\Omega}}_n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)=\frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=1}^n\sum_{\tau=1}^n\mathbf{s}_t\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\mathbf{s}_\tau\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)'k\left(\frac{t-\tau}{\gamma_n}\right),\,
$$

where  $k(\cdot)$  is a kernel function and  $\gamma_n$  is the bandwidth. The penalty term  $P_T$  then becomes

$$
P_T = -\mathbf{tr}\left\{\bar{\boldsymbol{\Omega}}_n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right\}.
$$
\n(28)

<span id="page-14-3"></span>To ensure consistency and positive semidefiniteness of  $\bar\Omega_n\big(\hat\theta\big)$ , following [de Jong and Davidson](#page-43-44) ([2000](#page-43-44)), we add three more assumptions. The first two are about the kernel function and the bandwidth parameter, while the last one is about the score function  $\mathbf{s}_t\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_n^p\right)$ .

**Assumption 11.** Assume the kernel function  $k(.) \in \mathcal{H}$ , where

$$
\mathcal{H} = \left\{ \begin{array}{c} k(\cdot): R \to [-1, 1], k(x) = k(-x), \text{ for any } x \in R, \\ \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} |k(x)| dx < \infty, \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} \psi(\xi) d\xi < \infty, \\ k(\cdot) \text{ is continuous at 0 and at all but a finite number of points in } R \end{array} \right\}
$$

where

$$
\psi\left(\xi\right) = \left(2\pi\right)^{-1} \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} k\left(x\right) e^{i\xi x} dx.
$$

<span id="page-15-4"></span>**Assumption 12.** The bandwidth parameter  $\gamma_n$  is an increasing function of sample size  $n$  and  $\gamma_n=o\left(n^{1/2}\right)$ .

<span id="page-15-1"></span>**Assumption 13.** The expectation of the score function  $E\left(\mathbf{s}_t\left(\pmb{\theta}_n^p\right)\right) = 0$  for any  $t$ .

**Remark 4.1.** In [Assumption](#page-14-3) [11,](#page-14-3) the function class  $H$  includes many well-known kernel functions, such as Bartlett, Parzen, Quadratic Spectral, and Tukey–Hanning kernels. It ensures that  $\dot{\bar\varOmega}_n\big(\hat\theta\big)$  is positive semidefinite with probability 1; see [Andrews](#page-42-2) ([1991\)](#page-42-2). Note that H does not include truncated kernels. If [Assumption](#page-8-5) [9](#page-8-5) is satisfied,  $P_T = P + o_p(1)$ .

<span id="page-15-6"></span><span id="page-15-2"></span>,

<span id="page-15-0"></span>**Remark 4.2.** From [Assumptions](#page-7-3) [1–](#page-7-3)[8](#page-8-6), we have  $\sqrt{n}$   $(\hat{\theta} - \theta_n^p) = O_p(1)$ ; see [Gallant and White](#page-43-19) ([1988\)](#page-43-19). In the online supplement, we show that our [Assumptions](#page-7-3) [1–](#page-7-3)[8](#page-8-6) and [11–](#page-14-3)[13](#page-15-1) imply the set of regularity conditions of [de Jong and Davidson](#page-43-44) ([2000](#page-43-44)) which in turn implies that

$$
\bar{\boldsymbol{\Omega}}_n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) - \mathbf{B}_n\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_n^p\right) \stackrel{p}{\to} 0. \tag{29}
$$

Our assumptions are more primitive than those imposed by [de Jong and Davidson](#page-43-44) ([2000](#page-43-44)). In the same online supplement, we also show that if [Assumption](#page-15-1) [13](#page-15-1) does not hold, it may not be true that  $\bar\Omega_n\left(\hat\theta\right)-{\bf B}_n\left(\theta_n^p\right)\stackrel{p}{\to}$  0. Together with ([27](#page-14-4)), ([29\)](#page-15-2) implies that

$$
P_T - \mathbf{tr}\left\{\mathbf{B}_n\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_n^p\right)\mathbf{H}_n^{-1}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_n^p\right)\right\} = \mathbf{tr}\left\{\bar{\boldsymbol{\Omega}}_n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right\} - \mathbf{tr}\left\{\mathbf{B}_n\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_n^p\right)\mathbf{H}_n^{-1}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_n^p\right)\right\} \stackrel{p}{\rightarrow} 0. \tag{30}
$$

Hence, the frequentist asymptotic justification of TIC is provided under misspecified models, and the asymptotic justification of TIC requires [Assumption](#page-15-1) [13.](#page-15-1)

Clearly, TIC requires the MLE of  $\theta$  to be available in the misspecified model. If only MCMC samples for  $\theta$  are available, a model selection criterion based on  $\theta$  is needed. We propose the following DIC to compare misspecified models,

$$
DIC_M = D(\bar{\theta}) + 2P_M \text{ with } P_M = \text{tr}\left\{n\bar{\Omega}_n(\bar{\theta}) V(\bar{\theta})\right\},\tag{31}
$$

where  $V\left(\bar{\pmb{\theta}}\right)$  is the posterior covariance matrix given by  $V\left(\bar{\pmb{\theta}}\right)=E\left[\left(\pmb{\theta}-\bar{\pmb{\theta}}\right)\left(\pmb{\theta}-\bar{\pmb{\theta}}\right)'\left|\textbf{y}\right.\right]$  which, when multiplied by  $-n$ , consistently estimate  ${\bf H}^{-1}_n\left(\pmb{\theta}^p_n\right)$  according to [Lemma](#page-9-0) [3.2](#page-9-0) . From [Li et al.](#page-43-5) ([2017\)](#page-43-5), we have  $D\left(\pmb{\bar{\theta}}\right)=D\left(\pmb{\hat{\theta}}\right)+O_p\left(1/n\right).^4$  $D\left(\pmb{\bar{\theta}}\right)=D\left(\pmb{\hat{\theta}}\right)+O_p\left(1/n\right).^4$  So the only thing that remains to be verified is  $\bar{\varOmega}_n\left(\bar{\pmb\theta}\right)-\mathbf{B}_n\left(\pmb\theta_n^p\right)\overset{p}{\to} 0.$ 

<span id="page-15-5"></span>**Theorem 4.1.** *Under [Assumptions](#page-7-3)* [1](#page-7-3)*–*[8](#page-8-6) *and* [10](#page-8-4)*–*[12](#page-15-4)*, we have*

<span id="page-15-9"></span><span id="page-15-8"></span><span id="page-15-7"></span><span id="page-15-3"></span>
$$
\bar{\boldsymbol{\Omega}}_n\left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) - \bar{\boldsymbol{\Omega}}_n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) \stackrel{p}{\to} 0,\tag{32}
$$

$$
P_M = P_T + \frac{\gamma_n}{n} C_1^M + \frac{1}{n} C_2^M + O_p\left(\frac{\gamma_n}{n^2}\right),\tag{33}
$$

$$
DIC_M = TIC + \frac{\gamma_n}{n} D_1^M + \frac{1}{n} D_2^M + O_p\left(\frac{\gamma_n}{n^2}\right),\tag{34}
$$

*where* γ*<sup>n</sup> is defined in [Assumption](#page-15-4)* [12](#page-15-4) *and*

$$
C_1^M = vec\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\right)' \tilde{U}_1 \bar{\mathbf{H}}_n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1} \frac{\hat{p}^{(1)}}{\hat{p}} \\ - \frac{1}{2} vec\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\right)' \tilde{U}_1 \bar{\mathbf{H}}_n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1} \bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)' vec\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\right),
$$

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>4</sup> While [Li et al.](#page-43-5) [\(2017](#page-43-5)) assumed correct model specification, such an assumption is not needed to obtain the relationship between D $(\bar{\theta})$  and  $D(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}).$ 

$$
C_2^M = -\frac{1}{2n}\text{tr}\left[\bar{\boldsymbol{\Omega}}_n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\otimes vec\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\right)'\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{(4)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right] + \frac{1}{2n}\text{tr}\left[\begin{array}{c} \bar{\boldsymbol{\Omega}}_n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)'\right.\\ \left. \qquad \qquad + \frac{1}{2n}\text{tr}\left[\bar{\boldsymbol{\Omega}}_n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\right)'\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\right]'\otimes \bar{\mathbf{H}}_n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\right] \end{array}\right] + \frac{1}{2n}\text{tr}\left[\bar{\boldsymbol{\Omega}}_n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)'\left[\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\otimes \bar{\mathbf{H}}_n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\right]\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\right] \right] - \frac{1}{n}\text{tr}\left[\left[\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\frac{\hat{\boldsymbol{\rho}}^{(1)}}{\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}}\right)'\otimes \bar{\mathbf{H}}_n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\right]\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\bar
$$

**Remark 4.3.** According to [Theorem](#page-15-5) [4.1](#page-15-5), under [Assumptions](#page-7-3) [1–](#page-7-3)[8](#page-8-6) and [10–](#page-8-4)[12,](#page-15-4) DIC*<sup>M</sup>* and TIC are asymptotically equivalent. Thus, DIC*<sup>M</sup>* can be regarded as a Bayesian version of TIC. If, in addition, [Assumption](#page-15-1) [13](#page-15-1) holds, then both [\(29\)](#page-15-2) and ([30](#page-15-6)) hold, justifying TIC asymptotically. The same frequentist justification applies to DIC<sub>M</sub> due to [\(32\)](#page-15-7). Therefore, DIC<sub>M</sub> and TIC provide the asymptotically unbiased estimation of the corresponding expected KL divergence.

**Remark 4.4.** For misspecified latent variable models, if DIC*<sup>M</sup>* is calculated based on *p*(**y**|θ) not on *p*(**y**|θ, *z*), the frequentist asymptotic justification of DIC*<sup>M</sup>* is also applicable.

**Remark 4.5.** Since DIC*<sup>M</sup>* applies to both correctly specified and misspecified models while DIC*<sup>L</sup>* applies only to asymptotically correctly specified models, it may be attempting to use DIC*<sup>M</sup>* rather than DIC*<sup>L</sup>* to select a model. However, DIC*<sup>M</sup>* requires the Fisher information matrix, while is usually easier to compute than the Hessian information matrix required by DIC *<sup>L</sup>* . Hence, if a candidate model that is "locally" misspecified in the sense of [Assumption](#page-8-5) [9](#page-8-5) and the empirical Fisher information matrix is too difficult to evaluate or numerically unstable, DIC $_L$  is preferable. This comparison applies to AIC and TIC, which may help explain why AIC is used more widely than TIC in practice.

## *4.2. BF and BIC*

<span id="page-16-0"></span>There are two strands of literature on model selection. The first strand aims to answer the following question: which model gives the best prediction of out-of-sample observations generated by the same mechanism that gives rise to the observed data? Clearly, this is a utility-based approach where the utility is the prediction. Based on hypothetically replicate data generated by the same mechanism that gives rise to the observed data, some predictive information criteria have been proposed for model comparison. These criteria minimize an expected loss function associated with the prediction. AIC, TIC, DIC, DIC $_L$ , and DIC $_M$  all belong to this strand.

The second strand aims to answer the following question: which model best explains the observed data? The BF and BIC belong to this strand. They compare competing models by examining model posterior probabilities and search for the "true" model. Recent development of the BF in economics is found in [Inoue and Shintani](#page-43-45) ([2018\)](#page-43-45). BIC is a large sample approximation to the log-marginal likelihood, although it is based on the MLE. Many applications of BIC in economics can be found. Both BFs and BIC enjoy the property of consistency, that is, when the true DGP is one of the candidate models, BFs and BIC select it with probability approaching 1 when the sample size goes to infinity. For more information about different model selection criteria, see [Burnham and Anderson](#page-43-8) ([2002\)](#page-43-8) and [Vehtari and Ojanen](#page-44-10) ([2012\)](#page-44-10).

In the Bayesian framework, the BF is arguably the most widely used statistic for model comparison. Suppose there are two candidate models,  $M_1$  and  $M_2$ . The BF of  $M_1$  against  $M_2$  is defined as

$$
B_{12} = \frac{p(\mathbf{y}|M_1)}{p(\mathbf{y}|M_2)},\tag{35}
$$

where  $p(y|M_k)$  is the marginal likelihood of model  $M_k$  which is obtained by

$$
p(\mathbf{y}|M_k) = \int_{\Theta_k} p(\mathbf{y}|\boldsymbol{\theta}_k, M_k) p(\boldsymbol{\theta}_k|M_k) d\boldsymbol{\theta}_k, \ \boldsymbol{\theta}_k \in \Theta_k, k = 1, 2,
$$

where  $\theta_k$  is the set of parameters in  $M_k$ ,  $p(y|\theta_k, M_k)$  the likelihood function of  $M_k$ ,  $p(\theta_k|M_k)$  the prior of  $\theta_k$  in  $M_k$ . If  $B_{12} > 1$ ,  $M_1$  is preferred to  $M_2$  and vice versa.

**Remark 4.6.** In practice, the BF is subject to several problems. First, it is not well-defined with improper priors. Second, the calculation of BFs requires comparing marginal likelihoods. When the dimension of parameter space is large, as is typical in latent variable models, high-dimensional integrations pose a formidable computational challenge. Third, it is well-known that the BF suffers from the Jeffreys–Lindley paradox when a vague and proper prior is employed; see [Kass](#page-43-46) [and Raftery](#page-43-46) [\(1995](#page-43-46)).

Based on the Laplace approximation, [Schwarz](#page-44-3) ([1978](#page-44-3)) showed that the log-marginal likelihood can be approximated by

<span id="page-17-1"></span>
$$
\ln p(\mathbf{y}|M_k) = \ln p\left(\mathbf{y}|\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_k, M_k\right) + \ln p\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_k|M_k\right) + \frac{P_k\pi}{2} - \frac{P_k\ln n}{2} - \frac{\left|-\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_k\right)\right|}{2} + O_p\left(\frac{1}{n}\right),\tag{36}
$$

where  $\hat{\pmb{\theta}}_k$  is the MLE of  $\pmb{\theta}_k$  and  $\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n\left(\hat{\pmb{\theta}}_k\right) = \frac{1}{n}$  $\partial^2 \ln p(\mathbf{y}|\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_k, M_k)$  $\frac{\partial P_{k}(\mathbf{S}^{k})}{\partial \theta_{k} \partial \theta_{k}^{k}}$ , and *P<sub>k</sub>* is the dimension of  $\theta_{k}$ . Ignoring all the *O<sub>p</sub>*(1) terms in ([36\)](#page-17-1) and under noninformative priors such as  $p\, (\bm{\theta}_k|\hat{M}_k)\propto$  1, Schwarz defined BIC $_k$  as

$$
\text{BIC}_k := -2\ln p\left(\mathbf{y}|\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_k, M_k\right) + P_k \ln n,
$$

where, as in AIC and TIC,  $-2\ln p\left(\mathbf{y}|\hat{\pmb{\theta}}_k,M_k\right)$  is used to measure the model fit, but  $P_k$  ln  $n$  is the new penalty term. Obviously, BIC<sub>k</sub> provides an approximation of  $-2 \ln (y/M_k)$ .

**Remark 4.7.** From the theoretical viewpoint, different criteria have different theoretical properties. BIC and BFs are consistent if the true model is one of the candidate models while AIC, TIC, DIC*<sup>L</sup>* , and DIC*<sup>M</sup>* aim to provide the asymptotically unbiased estimator of the expected KL divergence between the DGP and a predictive distribution. When the true model is not included as a candidate model, which is often the case in practice, it is not clear what the best model selected by BIC and BFs can achieve. In this case, if one is concerned with the KL divergence between the DGP and a predictive distribution, it is expected that TIC and DIC*<sup>M</sup>* perform better than BIC and BFs. Moreover, when the sample size is small, even when the true model is a candidate model, BIC and BFs may not select the true model. Again, if one is concerned with the KL divergence between the DGP and a predictive distribution, AIC and DIC<sub>L</sub> can perform better than BIC and BFs.

## *4.3. A simulation study*

<span id="page-17-0"></span>In this subsection, we design a simple experiment to compare alternative model selection criteria when the true DGP is not included in the set of candidate models. In other words, all candidate models are misspecified.

Following [Ding et al.](#page-43-47) ([2019\)](#page-43-47), we generate data from the following model

$$
y_i = \ln(1 + 46x_i) + e_i, \ e_i \sim N(0, 1), i = 1, ..., n,
$$
\n(37)

where  $x_i = 0.7(i - 1)/n$  which is fixed under repeated sampling by design. In practice, researchers do not know the functional form. Suppose the following set of polynomial regressions is considered,

$$
M_k: y_i = \sum_{j=0}^{k-1} \beta_{k,j+1} x_i^j + u_i,
$$
\n(38)

where  $k=1,\ldots, \left\lfloor n^{1/3} \right\rfloor$  and  $u_i$  is assumed to be  $N\left(0,\sigma^2\right)$ . When  $k\to\infty$  as  $n\to\infty$ , the polynomial regression is related to the sieve estimator which uses progressively more complex models to estimate an unknown function as more data becomes available. In our experiment, we estimate and compare all the candidate models  $\{M_k,k=1,\ldots,\left\lfloor n^{1/3}\right\rfloor\}$ . In  $M_k$ ,  $\sum_{j=0}^{k-1}\beta_{k,j+1}x_i^j$  is used to approximate  $\ln(1+46x_i)$ . Let  $\pmb{\beta}_k=(\beta_1,\ldots,\beta_k)'$  so that  $\pmb{\theta}_k=\left(\pmb{\beta}_k^{'},\sigma^2\right)$  and the number of parameters is  $k + 1$ . Let  $\mathbf{x}^j = (x_1^j, x_2^j, \dots, x_n^j)^T$ ,  $\mathbf{X}_k = (\mathbf{x}^0, \mathbf{x}^1, \dots, \mathbf{x}^{k-1})$ , and  $\mathbf{X} = (\mathbf{x}^0, \mathbf{x}^1, \dots, \mathbf{x}^{(n^{1/3})-1})$ .

Two different sample sizes are considered,  $n~=~100, 500.$  For each candidate model  $M_k$ , we obtain the MLE of  $\pmb{\theta}_k$ , denoted by  $\widehat{\theta}_k = (\widehat{\beta}_k)$  $\hat{r}_k$ ,  $\hat{\sigma}^2$ ), and then calculate AIC, TIC, and BIC.  $\hat{\theta}_k$ , which is also the least squares estimate, has a closed-form expression for this model.

The following *g*-prior is used for  $\theta_k$  when we conduct the Bayesian analysis,

$$
\pi\left(\sigma^2\right) \propto \frac{1}{\sigma^2}, \quad \beta_k \sim N\left(\beta_{k,0}, g\sigma^2\left(\mathbf{X}_k'\mathbf{X}_k\right)^{-1}\right),\tag{39}
$$

where  $g = n$  denotes the unit information prior ([Kass and Wasserman](#page-43-48), [1995\)](#page-43-48) in the normal regression case. The posterior mean and the posterior variance of  $\theta_k$  are

$$
E(\boldsymbol{\beta}_k | \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{X}) = \frac{g}{g+1} \left( \frac{\boldsymbol{\beta}_{k,0}}{g} + \hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_k \right),
$$
\n(40)

<span id="page-18-1"></span>



$$
E\left(\sigma^{2}|\mathbf{y},\mathbf{X}\right)=\frac{s^{2}+\frac{1}{g+1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{k}-\boldsymbol{\beta}_{k,0}\right)^{\prime}\mathbf{X}_{k}^{\prime}\mathbf{X}_{k}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\beta}}_{k}-\boldsymbol{\beta}_{k,0}\right)}{n-2},
$$
\n(41)

$$
Var(\boldsymbol{\beta}_k|\mathbf{y}, \mathbf{X}) = \frac{g}{g+1} \left( \mathbf{X}_k' \mathbf{X}_k \right)^{-1} E\left( \sigma^2 | \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{X} \right), \tag{42}
$$

$$
Var(\sigma^2|\mathbf{y}, \mathbf{X}) = \frac{2E(\sigma^2|\mathbf{y}, \mathbf{X})^2}{n-4},
$$
\n(43)

$$
Cov(\beta_k, \sigma^2 | \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{X}) = 0. \tag{44}
$$

These closed-form expressions are used to calculate  $DIC_L$  and  $DIC_M$ . For comparison, we also calculate the BF of  $M_k$  against *M*<sub>1</sub> when the *g*-prior is used for both  $\theta_k$  and  $\theta_1$ . The BF has a closed-form expression given by

BF 
$$
(M_k, M_1) = \frac{(1+g)^{(n-k-1)/2}}{(1+g(1-R_k^2))^{(n-1)/2}},
$$
 (45)

where  $R_k^2 = 1 - \frac{(\mathbf{y} - \mathbf{X}_k \hat{\beta}_k)'(\mathbf{y} - \mathbf{X}_k \hat{\beta}_k)}{(\mathbf{y} - \bar{\mathbf{y}})'(\mathbf{y} - \bar{\mathbf{y}})}$  with  $\bar{\mathbf{y}} = \frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^n y_i$ . For the details about the g-prior and the BF, see [Liang et al.](#page-43-49) [\(2008](#page-43-49)).

Each of the six criteria is used to select the best model (call it  $M_{k*}$ ). Based on  $M_{k*}$ , we then calculate *EKL*( $k^*$ ) where  $EKL(k^*)$  is  $EKL_{ML}(k^*)$  defined in Eq. [\(5\)](#page-3-3) for AIC, TIC, and BIC and is  $EKL_B(k^*)$  defined in Eq. ([7](#page-3-4)) for DIC<sub>L</sub>, DIC<sub>M</sub>, and the BF. In general *EKL*(*k* ∗ ) does not have a closed-form expression and a numerical method is needed. To compute *EKL*(*k* ∗ ), we first simulate 1,000 replications of **y** from  $M_k$ , denoted by  $\mathbf{y}^l$  for  $l=1,2,\ldots,$  1, 000. Then, for each  $\mathbf{y}^l$ , we simulate 1,000 replications of  $y^l$  from  $M_k$ , denoted by  $y^m_{rep}$  for  $m=1,2,\ldots,$   $1,$  000. These simulations are possible here because we know what the true DGP is. Then we calculate *EKL*(*k* ∗ ) by

$$
\widehat{EKL}_{ML}(k^*) = \frac{1}{1000} \sum_{l=1}^{1000} \frac{1}{1000} \sum_{m=1}^{1000} D(\mathbf{y}_{rep}^m | \widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k^*} (\mathbf{y}^l), M_{k^*}), \text{ for AIC, TIC, BIC};
$$

$$
\widehat{EKL}_B(k^*) = \frac{1}{1000} \sum_{l=1}^{1000} \frac{1}{1000} \sum_{m=1}^{1000} D(\mathbf{y}_{rep}^m | \overline{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{k^*} (\mathbf{y}^l), M_{k^*}), \text{ for DIC}_L, \text{DIC}_M, \text{BF}.
$$

The relative frequencies of the selected models by each of six criteria (namely AIC, TIC, DIC*<sup>L</sup>* , DIC*<sup>M</sup>* , BF, and BIC) are reported in [Fig.](#page-19-0) [1](#page-19-0). Also reported in Fig. 1 are the average values of k<sup>\*</sup>, all across 1,000 replications. Several interesting results can be found in [Fig.](#page-19-0) [1.](#page-19-0) The models selected by the BF and BIC tend to be more parsimonious than those selected by AIC, TIC, DIC<sub>L</sub>, and DIC<sub>M</sub>. This result is not surprising as BIC has a larger penalty term than AIC. Second, the average k\*s selected by the BF and BIC are very similar to each other, suggested that they tend to select the same model, especially when  $n = 500$ . Similarly, the average  $k^*$ s selected by AIC and DIC<sub>L</sub> are very similar, suggested that they tend to select the same model. Also, the average k<sup>\*</sup>s selected by TIC and DIC<sub>M</sub> are very similar, suggested that they tend to select the same model. Third, as the sample size increases, the average *k* ∗ s selected by all criteria, including BIC and the BF, tend to increase. This is not surprising as the true DGP is not a candidate model.

[Table](#page-18-1) [1](#page-18-1) reports the average values of (*EKL*(*k*\*)–1–ln(2 $\pi$ )), scaled by 1,000, where *EKL*(*k*\*) is *EKL<sub>ML</sub>*(*k\**) for AIC, TIC, and BIC and  $EKL_B(k^*)$  for DIC<sub>L</sub>, DIC<sub>M</sub>, and the BF, all across 1, 000 replications. We report  $(EKL(k^*)-1-\ln(2\pi))\times 10^3$  instead of *EKL*(*k* ∗ ) to better highlight differences in the expected KL divergence under different criteria. The most important result from [Table](#page-18-1) [1](#page-18-1) is that DIC*<sup>M</sup>* leads to a much smaller value of the expected KL divergence than the BF when *n* = 100 and 500. Even though DIC $_{\rm L}$  is not asymptotically justified in this case due to the omission of the true DGP in the set of candidate models, DIC<sub>L</sub> leads to a small value of the expected KL divergence than the BF. Interestingly and not surprisingly, TIC leads to a small value of the expected KL divergence than BIC. Results obtained from this Monte Carlo study indicate that if one's objective is to choose a model that leads to a smaller value for the KL divergence between the DGP and  $p(\mathbf{y}_{rep}|\bar{\theta}(\mathbf{y}))$ , it is better to use DIC*<sup>M</sup>* than the BF. Similarly, if one's objective is to choose a model that leads to a smaller value for the KL divergence between the DGP and  $p\left(\mathbf{y}_{rep}|\widehat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}(\mathbf{y})\right)$ , it is better to use TIC than BIC.

#### **5. Applications**

<span id="page-18-0"></span>We now illustrate the proposed method in two applications. The first example is asset pricing models under the Student *t* distribution. The likelihood functions of these models not only have an analytical form but also can be rewritten in a latent variable form. We choose this example to compare the two alternative formulations of the same model, paying



<span id="page-19-0"></span>Fig. 1. The figure plots relative frequencies of the polynomial orders selected by different criteria. The numbers in parentheses are the average values of *k* ∗ s.

particular attention to the impact the two equivalent formulations on DIC, DIC<sub>L</sub>, DIC<sub>M</sub>. In the second example  $p\left(\bm{y}|\bar{\theta}\right)$  is not available in closed-form. Given that DIC<sub>1</sub> is too difficult to compute, we calculate DIC<sub>L</sub> and DIC<sub>M</sub> by particle filters proposed in Section [3.4.3.](#page-13-0)

## *5.1. Factor asset pricing models*

Factor asset pricing models are important in modern finance. These models generally assume that the return distribution is normal. Unfortunately, there has been overwhelming empirical evidence against normality for asset returns, which have led researchers to investigate asset pricing models with heavy-tailed distributions. [Zhou](#page-44-11) [\(1993](#page-44-11)) suggested using the multivariate *t* distribution to replace the multivariate normal distribution. Moreover, based on the efficient market theory, the asset excess premium should not be statistically different from zero. At last, the multivariate *t* distribution can be rewritten as a scale-mixture framework to become a latent variable model. Hence, we consider the following six asset pricing models:

Model 1:
$$
R_t = \beta F_t + \epsilon_t
$$
,  $\epsilon_t \sim N[0, \Sigma]$ ,  
\nModel 2: $R_t = \alpha + \beta F_t + \epsilon_t$ ,  $\epsilon_t \sim N[0, \Sigma]$ ,  
\nModel 3: $R_t = \beta F_t + \epsilon_t$ ,  $\epsilon_t \sim t[0, \Sigma, \nu]$ ,  
\nModel 4: $R_t = \beta F_t + \epsilon_t$ ,  $\epsilon_t \sim N(0, \Sigma/\omega_t)$ ,  $\omega_t \sim \Gamma\left(\frac{\nu}{2}, \frac{\nu}{2}\right)$ ,  
\nModel 5: $R_t = \alpha + \beta F_t + \epsilon_t$ ,  $\epsilon_t \sim t[0, \Sigma, \nu]$ ,  
\nModel 6: $R_t = \alpha + \beta F_t + \epsilon_t$ ,  $\epsilon_t \sim N(0, \Sigma/\omega_t)$ ,  $\omega_t \sim \Gamma\left(\frac{\nu}{2}, \frac{\nu}{2}\right)$ ,

where  $R_t$  is the excess return of portfolio at period  $t$  with  $N\times 1$  dimension,  ${\bf F}_t$  a  $K\times 1$  vector of factor portfolio excess returns, α an *N* × 1 vector of intercepts, β an *N* × K vector of scaled covariances,  $\epsilon_t$  the random error,  $t = 1, 2, \ldots, n$ . For convenience, we restrict  $\Sigma$  to be a diagonal matrix and v to be a known constant as  $v = 3$ . It is noted that Model 4 is the scale-mixture distributional representation of Model 3, and Model 5 is the scale mixture distributional representation of Model 6.

nouer selection results for runia rrenen ulree luctor mouels.						
Model	$M_1$	M <sub>2</sub>	$M_3$	$M_4$	$M_5$	M <sub>6</sub>
P	100	125	100	100	125	125
$P_{D.1}$	100	125	100	100	125	125
DIC <sub>1</sub>	$-132196$	$-132762$	$-143510$	$-143510$	$-144635$	$-144635$
$P_{D.7}$	NA	<b>NA</b>	NA	1090	<b>NA</b>	1115
DIC <sub>7</sub>	NA	NA	NA	$-145159$	NA	$-146339$
$P_I$	100	125	100	100	126	126
DIC <sub>L</sub>	$-132196$	$-132762$	$-143509$	$-143509$	$-144634$	$-144634$
$P_M$	997	1015	291	291	403	403
DIC <sub>M</sub>	$-130402$	$-130982$	$-143128$	$-143128$	$-144079$	$-144079$

<span id="page-20-1"></span>**Table 2** Model selection results for Fama–French three factor models.

Monthly returns of 25 portfolios, constructed at the end of each June, are the intersections of 5 portfolios formed on size (market equity, ME) and 5 portfolios formed on the ratio of book equity to market equity (BE/ME). The Fama/French's three factors, market excess return, SMB (Small Minus Big), HML (High Minus Low) are used as explanatory factors ([Fama](#page-43-50) [and French,](#page-43-50) [1993](#page-43-50)). The sample period is from July 1926 to November 2017, so that  $N = 25$ ,  $n = 1097$ . The data are freely available from the data library of Kenneth French.<sup>[5](#page-20-0)</sup>

Bayesian inference for factor asset pricing models has attracted a considerable amount of attention in the empirical asset pricing literature. [Avramov and Zhou](#page-43-51) ([2010](#page-43-51)) provided an excellent review of the literature on Bayesian portfolio analysis. To obtain MCMC output, we need to specify the prior distributions for parameters. Here, to represent the prior ignorance, we assign some vague conjugate prior distributions,

<span id="page-20-0"></span>
$$
\alpha_i \sim N[0, 100], \beta_{ij} \sim N[0, 100], \Sigma_{ii}^{-1} \sim \Gamma[0.01, 0.01].
$$

Here, we draw 100,000 random observations from the posterior distributions in each model where the first 40,000 is used as the burn-in sample, and the next 60,000 iterations are collected with every 3rd observation as effective observations. Hence, these are 20,000 effective observations.

To compare these models, based on 20,000 effective observations, we calculate DIC1, *PD*,1, DIC*<sup>L</sup>* , *P<sup>L</sup>* , DIC*<sup>M</sup>* , *P<sup>M</sup>* , for all candidate models, and DIC<sub>7</sub> and *P*<sub>*D*,7</sub> for Model 4 and Model 6 as there are latent variables in these two models. The results are reported in [Table](#page-20-1) [2](#page-20-1). Several interesting findings emerge from Table [2.](#page-20-1) First,  $DIC_1$  in Model 3 is very different from  $DIC_7$ in Model 4, although these two models are the same. The reason for the difference is that in Model 3 there is no latent variable, whereas in Model 4 the scale-mixture representation of the Student *t* distribution introduces latent variables,  $\{\omega_t\}$ . Due to the difference, the common practice of DIC for Model 3 is DIC<sub>1</sub> and for Model 4 is DIC<sub>7</sub>. The sharp difference between the two DIC values for the identical model is clearly unsatisfactory. For the same reason,  $DIC_1$  in Model 5 is very different from DIC<sub>7</sub> in Model 6. Second, the asymptotic results developed in [Li et al.](#page-43-5) ([2017](#page-43-5)) and in [Theorem](#page-9-1) [3.1](#page-9-1) above suggest that  $P_{D,1}$  and  $P_L$  should be close to the actual number of the parameters,  $P$ , if the prior distribution is dominated by the likelihood function. The results are confirmed by [Table](#page-20-1) [2](#page-20-1). Not surprisingly,  $P_{D,1}$  is almost identical to  $P_L$  and DIC<sub>1</sub> and DIC*<sup>L</sup>* are almost the same for each candidate model. Finally, DIC, DIC*<sup>L</sup>* , DIC*<sup>M</sup>* , all pick Model 6 (and Model 5) as the best model.

#### *5.2. Stochastic volatility models*

Stochastic volatility (SV) models have been found very useful for pricing derivative securities. In the discrete-time log-normal SV models, the log-volatility is the state variable which is often assumed to follow an AR(1) model. The basic log-normal SV model is of the form:

$$
y_t = \exp(h_t/2)u_t, \ u_t \sim N(0, 1),
$$
  
\n
$$
h_t = \mu + \phi(h_{t-1} - \mu) + \tau v_t, \ v_t \sim N(0, 1),
$$

where  $t = 1, 2, \ldots, n$ ,  $y_t$  is the continuously compounded return,  $h_t$  the unobserved log-volatility,  $h_0 = \mu$ ,  $u_t$  and  $v_t$  are independent for all *t*. In this paper, we denote this model *M*1.

To carry out the MCMC analysis of *M*1, following [Meyer and Yu](#page-43-52) ([2000\)](#page-43-52), the prior distributions are specified as follows:

$$
\mu \sim N(0, 100), \phi \sim Beta(1, 1), \quad 1/\tau^2 \sim \Gamma(0.001, 0.001).
$$

An important and well documented empirical feature in many financial time series is the leverage effect. Following [Yu](#page-44-12) ([2005\)](#page-44-12), we define the leverage effect SV model as:

 $y_t = \exp(h_t/2) u_t, u_t \sim N(0, 1)$ 

<sup>5</sup> [http://mba.tuck.dartmouth.edu/pages/faculty/ken.french/data\\_library.html](http://mba.tuck.dartmouth.edu/pages/faculty/ken.french/data_library.html)





*M*<sup>2</sup> 31.33 1693.36 1756.21 3.24 1837.78 1844.30 5.02 1837.78 1847.82

<span id="page-21-3"></span>¯θ) DIC*<sup>M</sup>*

<span id="page-21-2"></span><span id="page-21-1"></span>

$$
h_{t+1} = \mu + \phi (h_t - \mu) + \tau v_{t+1}, v_{t+1} \sim N(0, 1)
$$

with

$$
\left(\begin{array}{c}u_t\\v_{t+1}\end{array}\right)\stackrel{i.i.d}{\sim} N\left\{\left(\begin{array}{c}0\\0\end{array}\right),\left(\begin{array}{cc}1&\rho\\ \rho&1\end{array}\right)\right\}
$$

and  $h_0 = \mu$ . In this model,  $\rho$  captures the leverage effect if  $\rho < 0$ . In this case, there is a negative relationship between the expected future volatility and the current return. We denote this model  $M_2$  and specify the prior distribution of  $\rho$  as  $\rho \sim$ Unif(−1, 1).

Our goal here is to compare the two models using DIC<sub>7</sub>, DIC<sub>L</sub>, and DIC<sub>M</sub>. In both cases,  $p(y|\theta)$  is not available in closedform. Since both specifications are nonlinear non-Gaussian state-space models, the Kalman filter is not applicable, making  $DIC_1$  is time-consuming to compute. To compute  $DIC_L$  and  $DIC_M$ , we use the particle filters to evaluate the observed-data likelihood and its second derivatives.

The dataset consists of 945 daily mean-corrected returns on Pound/Dollar exchange rates, covering the period between 01/10/81 and 28/06/85. For MCMC, after a burn-in period of 10,000 iterations, we save every 20th value for the next 100,000 iterations to get 5,000 effective draws. The same dataset was used in [Kim et al.](#page-43-53) ([1998\)](#page-43-53) and [Meyer and Yu](#page-43-52) [\(2000](#page-43-52)). The posterior mean and standard error of parameters in the two competing models are reported in [Table](#page-21-1) [3.](#page-21-1) Note that the in  $M_2$ , the posterior mean of  $\rho$  is very close to zero, relative to its posterior standard error.

[Table](#page-21-1) [4](#page-21-2) reports DIC<sub>7</sub>, P<sub>D.7</sub>, DIC<sub>L</sub>, P<sub>L</sub>, DIC<sub>M</sub>, P<sub>M</sub>. The following findings can be obtained from Table [3.](#page-21-1) First and foremost, DIC<sub>L</sub> and DIC<sup>BP</sup> suggest the same ranking of the competing models, but DIC<sub>7</sub> is different. In <u>p</u>articular, DIC<sub>7</sub> suggests that  $M_2$  is better than  $M_1$ . According to DIC<sub>7</sub>,  $M_1$  and  $M_2$  perform nearly the same judged by D  $(\bar{\theta})$ . However,  $M_2$  reduces the effective number of parameters by 22.3 over  $M_1$ . This reduction of the model complexity is the reason why DIC<sub>7</sub> prefers *M*2. This result is surprising as the posterior mean of the leverage effect is nearly zero, as reported in [Table](#page-20-1) [2.](#page-20-1) On the other hand, DIC*<sup>L</sup>* suggests that *M*<sup>1</sup> is slightly better than *M*<sup>2</sup> although the difference is not worth to mention. In DIC*<sup>L</sup>* , *P<sup>L</sup>* is 2.32 in *M*<sup>1</sup> and 3.24 in *M*2. These values are very close to the actual numbers of parameters in the two models. Similar results are found in DIC*<sup>M</sup>* . *P<sup>M</sup>* is 4.44 in *M*<sup>1</sup> and 5.02 in *M*2. Given that *M*<sup>2</sup> has one extra parameter, this difference is reasonable. Moreover,  $M_1$  and  $M_2$  perform nearly the same judged by  $D(\bm{\overline{\theta}}).$  These two observations explain why  $M_1$  is slightly better than  $M_2$ . This empirical example clearly demonstrates that  $\dot{DIC}_L$  and  $\dot{DIC}_M$  can select more reasonable models than  $\dot{DIC}_7$ . We can compare the computational time. The CPU time for computing DIC<sub>L</sub> and DIC<sub>M</sub> together is 345 s.<sup>[6](#page-21-3)</sup> For DIC<sub>1</sub>, the CPU time is 1922 s. If one increases the number of effective draws, the CPU time will increase linearly for  $DIC_1$  but remain the same order for DIC*<sup>L</sup>* and DIC*<sup>M</sup>* .

## **6. Conclusion**

<span id="page-21-0"></span>Although latent variable models can be conveniently estimated in the Bayesian framework via MCMC if the data augmentation technique is used, we argue that the conditional likelihood function should not be used to obtain DIC. This is because, the conditional likelihood invalidate the standard Bayesian large sample theory and the ML asymptotic theory, which are needed to show that DIC is an asymptotically unbiased estimator of the expected KL divergence between the DGP and the predictive distribution. An example is given where DIC provides an asymptotically biased estimator of the expected KL divergence between the DGP and the predictive distribution.

While in principle one can use the standard DIC (i.e.  $DIC_1$ ), in practice,  $DIC_1$  is very difficult to calculate for many latent variable models because the observed-data likelihood is not available in closed-form. In particular, one has to

<sup>6</sup> The CPU time is based on Laptop Intel (R) Core (TM) i7-7500H CPU @2.70 GHz, implementing MATLAB R2017b.

numerically evaluate the observed-data likelihood at each MCMC iteration. It makes the implementation of  $DIC<sub>1</sub>$  practically non-operational for many latent variable models.

We introduce DIC*<sup>L</sup>* for comparing latent variable models. We show that DIC *<sup>L</sup>* can be justified by the standard Bayesian asymptotic theory. In particular, we show that DIC<sub>L</sub> is an asymptotically unbiased estimator of the expected KL divergence minus 2*C* when the loss function is based on a plug-in predictive distribution. We then develop a simple and general approach to computing DIC<sub>L</sub> for latent variable models. Since the latent variables are not treated as parameters in defining DIC*<sup>L</sup>* , DIC*<sup>L</sup>* is robust to nonlinear transformations of the latent variables.

The justification of DIC<sub>1</sub> and DIC<sub>L</sub> requires the candidate model is a good approximation to the true DGP. We develop DIC*<sup>M</sup>* to compare misspecified models. DIC*<sup>M</sup>* can be regarded as the Bayesian version of TIC. Under a set of regularity conditions, we show that DIC*<sup>M</sup>* is an asymptotically unbiased estimator of the expected KL divergence minus 2*C* when the loss function is based on a plug-in predictive distribution. The advantages of DIC<sub>I</sub> and DIC<sub>M</sub> are illustrated using two popular models. Empirical examples demonstrate that  $DIC<sub>L</sub>$  and  $DIC<sub>M</sub>$  can select more reasonable models than  $DIC<sub>C<sub>1</sub></sub>$ , a widely-used Bayesian model selection criterion to compare latent variables. The detail of the implementation of DIC*<sup>L</sup>* and DIC<sub>M</sub> can be found in [Li et al.](#page-43-54) ([2019](#page-43-54)) where the R code may be downloaded.

## **Appendix A**

*A.1. Notations*



**Proof of [Lemma](#page-8-7) [3.1.](#page-8-7)** We can decompose  $\frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=1}^{n} \left[ l_t(\theta) - l_t(\theta_n^p) \right]$  as

$$
\frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=1}^{n}\left[l_{t}(\theta)-l_{t}(\theta_{n}^{p})\right]
$$
\n
$$
=\frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=1}^{n}\left(l_{t}(\theta)-E\left[l_{t}(\theta)\right]\right)+\frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=1}^{n}\left(E\left[l_{t}(\theta)\right]-E\left[l_{t}(\theta_{n}^{p})\right]\right)+\frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=1}^{n}\left(E\left[l_{t}(\theta_{n}^{p})\right]-l_{t}(\theta_{n}^{p})\right).
$$

From ([18](#page-8-3)), we know that for any  $\varepsilon > 0$ , there exists  $\delta_1(\varepsilon) > 0$  and  $N(\varepsilon) > 0$ , for all  $n > N(\varepsilon)$ ,

$$
\frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=1}^n\left\{E\left[l_t\left(\theta\right)\right]-E\left[l_t\left(\theta_n^p\right)\right]\right\}<-\delta_1(\varepsilon),
$$

if  $\theta \in \Theta \backslash N\left(\theta_{n}^{p},\varepsilon\right)$ . Thus, for any  $\varepsilon >0$ , if  $\theta \in \Theta \backslash N\left(\theta_{n}^{p},\varepsilon\right)$ , for all  $n>N\left(\varepsilon\right)$ ,

$$
\frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=1}^n \left[l_t(\boldsymbol{\theta}) - l_t(\boldsymbol{\theta}_n^p)\right] < \frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=1}^n \left(l_t(\boldsymbol{\theta}) - E\left[l_t(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right]\right) - \delta_1(\varepsilon) + \frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=1}^n \left(E\left[l_t(\boldsymbol{\theta}_n^p)\right] - l_t(\boldsymbol{\theta}_n^p)\right),
$$

and

$$
\sup_{\theta \in N(\theta_n^p, \varepsilon)} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n \left[ l_t(\theta) - l_t(\theta_n^p) \right]
$$
\n
$$
\leq \sup_{\theta \in N(\theta_n^p, \varepsilon)} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n (l_t(\theta) - E[l_t(\theta)]) - \delta_1(\varepsilon) + \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n \left( E[l_t(\theta_n^p)] - l_t(\theta_n^p) \right)
$$
\n
$$
\leq \sup_{\theta \in N(\theta_n^p, \varepsilon)} \left| \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n (l_t(\theta) - E[l_t(\theta)]) \right| - \delta_1(\varepsilon) + \left| \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n \left( E[l_t(\theta_n^p)] - l_t(\theta_n^p) \right) \right|
$$
\n
$$
\leq 2 \sup_{\theta \in \Theta} \left| \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n (l_t(\theta) - E[l_t(\theta)]) \right| - \delta_1(\varepsilon).
$$
\n(46)

Under [Assumptions](#page-7-3) [1](#page-7-3)[–6,](#page-8-0) the uniform convergence condition is satisfied, that is,

<span id="page-22-0"></span>
$$
P\left(\sup_{\theta\in\Theta}\left|\frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=1}^{n}\left(l_t\left(\theta\right)-E\left[l_t\left(\theta\right)\right]\right)\right|<\varepsilon\right)\to 1,\tag{47}
$$

From the uniform convergence, if we choose  $\delta_2$  such that  $0 < \delta_2 < \delta_1(\varepsilon)/2$ , we have

$$
P\left[\sup_{\theta\in\Theta}\left|\frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=1}^n\left(l_t\left(\theta\right)-E\left[l_t\left(\theta\right)\right]\right)\right|<\delta_2\right]\to 1.
$$

Hence,

$$
P\left[2\sup_{\theta\in\Theta}\left|\frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=1}^n\left(l_t\left(\theta\right)-E\left[l_t\left(\theta\right)\right]\right)\right|-\delta_1\left(\varepsilon\right)<2\delta_2-\delta_1\left(\varepsilon\right)\right]\to 1.
$$

From  $(46)$  $(46)$  $(46)$ , we have

$$
P\left[2 \sup_{\theta \in \Theta} \left| \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^{n} \left(l_t(\theta) - E\left[l_t(\theta)\right]\right) \right| - \delta_1(\varepsilon) < 2\delta_2 - \delta_1(\varepsilon) \right] \le P\left[\sup_{\Theta \backslash N\left(\theta_{n,\varepsilon}^p\right)} \frac{1}{n} \left[\sum_{t=1}^{n} l_t(\theta) - \sum_{t=1}^{n} l_t(\theta_{n}^p)\right] < 2\delta_2 - \delta_1(\varepsilon) \right].
$$

Letting  $K_1(\varepsilon) = -(2\delta_2 - \delta_1(\varepsilon)) > 0$ , we have, for any  $\varepsilon$ ,

$$
\lim_{n\to\infty} P\left[\sup_{\Theta\setminus N\left(\theta_{n}^{p},\varepsilon\right)}\frac{1}{n}\left[\sum_{t=1}^{n}l_{t}\left(\theta\right)-\sum_{t=1}^{n}l_{t}\left(\theta_{n}^{p}\right)\right]<-K_{1}\left(\varepsilon\right)\right]=1,
$$

which proves the consistency condition given by  $(19)$  $(19)$ . The proof of the other two concentration conditions  $(20)$  can be done similarly and hence omitted.

## *A.2. Proof of [Lemma](#page-9-0)* [3.2](#page-9-0)

In this subsection, for any function  $f(\theta)$ , let  $f^{(j)}(\theta)$  be the *j*th order derivative of  $f(\theta)$  for  $j=1,2,3,4,5$ . Furthermore, let  $\hat{f}$  be the value of function  $f$  evaluated at  $\hat{\theta}$ , that is,  $\hat{f}$   $\;:=\;f\left(\hat{\theta}\right)$  and for convenience of exposition, we write  $\frac{\partial^d}{\partial t_1,\dots,\partial\theta_i}f$  ( $\bm{\theta})$  as  $f_{j_1\dots j_d}$  and let  $\hat{f}_{j_1\dots j_d}:=f_{j_1\dots j_d}\left(\hat{\bm{\theta}}\right)$ . For the definition of high order derivatives, we follow [Magnus and](#page-43-55)  $\frac{\partial \theta_j}{\partial \theta_j}$   $\frac{\partial \theta_j}{\partial \theta_j}$  (v) as  $j_1...j_d$  and let  $j_1...j_d$   $\cdots$   $j_1...j_d$  (v). For the definition of high order derivatives, we follow magnes and  $\theta_j$ . Equipment of  $j$  is a column vector. Then the Hessian matrix at  $\theta$  is denoted by  $h_n^{(2)}$  ( $\theta$ ) which is briefly written as  $h^{(2)}$  and its  $(i,j)$ -component is written as  $h_j$ while the components of its inverse are written as  $\sigma_{ij}$ . Let  $\mu^4_{ijkq},\ \mu^6_{ijkqrs},\ \mu^{10}_{ijkqrstwv}$   $\mu^{10}_{ijkqrstwv}$   $\mu^{12}_{ijkqstwv}$  be the fourth, sixth, eighth, tenth, and twelfth central moments of a multivariate Normal distribution whose covariance matrix is  $\hat{h}^{(-2)} := (h^{(2)}(\theta))^{-1} \big|_{\theta = \hat{\theta}}.$ 

We say the pair ( $\{h_n\}$ , *b*) satisfies the analytical assumptions for the stochastic Laplace method on  $\wp_\theta$ , if the following assumptions are met. There exist positive numbers  $\varepsilon$ , *M* and  $\eta$  such that (i) with probability approach one (w.p.a.1), for all  $\theta\in B_\varepsilon\left(\hat{\bm{\theta}}\right)$  and all  $1\leq j_1,\ldots,j_d\leq P$  with  $0\leq d\leq 8$ ,  $\|h_n\left(\bm{\theta}\right)\|< M$  and  $\left\|h_{j_1\cdots j_d}\left(\bm{\theta}\right)\right\|< M$ ; (ii) w.p.a.1,  $\hat{h}^{(2)}$  is positive definite and  $\det\left(\hat{h}^{(2)}\right)>\eta$  ; (iii) For all  $\varepsilon>0$ , there exists  $K_{1}\left(\varepsilon\right)>0$ ,  $\sup_{\boldsymbol{\Theta}\setminus\boldsymbol{B}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{n}^{p},\varepsilon\right)}\frac{1}{n}\left[-h_{n}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}\right)-\left(-h_{n}\left(\boldsymbol{\theta}_{n}^{p}\right)\right)\right]<-K_{1}\left(\varepsilon\right)$ , w.p.a.1; (iv) w.p.a.1, for all  $\theta \in B_\varepsilon\left(\hat{\theta}\right)$  and all  $1 \leq j_1, \ldots, j_d \leq P$ , with  $0 \leq d \leq 6$ ,  $\|b\left(\theta\right)\| < M$  and  $\left\|b_{j_1\cdots j_d}\left(\theta\right)\right\| < M$ .

Note that our assumptions are different from those in Section [3](#page-4-0) of [Kass et al.](#page-43-23) ([1990\)](#page-43-23) in two aspects. First, we require  $h_n(\theta)$  be eight-times continuously differentiable and  $b(\theta)$  be six-times continuously differentiable. Second, for conditions (ii) and (iii), instead of almost sure boundedness and almost sure convergence, we assume they hold w.p.a.1. We do so because we are interested in convergence in probability only. To prove [Lemma](#page-9-0) [3.2](#page-9-0), we first review a result of [Li et al.](#page-43-5) ([2017](#page-43-5)).

<span id="page-23-0"></span>**Lemma A.1.** For some real-valued function  $g(\theta)$ , if both  $(\{h_n(\theta)\}, g(\theta)b_p(\theta))$  and  $(\{h_n(\theta)\}, b_p(\theta))$  satisfy the analytical *assumptions for the stochastic Laplace method on*  $\wp_{\theta}$ *, then* 

$$
\frac{\int g(\theta) b_D(\theta) \exp(-nh_n(\theta)) d\theta}{\int b_D(\theta) \exp(-nh_n(\theta)) d\theta} = \hat{g} + \frac{1}{n}B_1 + \frac{1}{n^2}(B_2 - B_3) + O_p\left(\frac{1}{n^3}\right),
$$

*where*

$$
B_1=\frac{1}{2}\sum_{ij}\hat{\sigma}_{ij}\hat{g}_{ij}+\frac{\sum_{ij}\hat{\sigma}_{ij}\hat{b}_{D,j}\hat{g}_i}{\hat{b}_D}-\frac{1}{6}\sum_{ijkq}\hat{h}_{ijk}\mu_{ijkq}^4\hat{g}_q,
$$

$$
B_2 = -\frac{1}{120} \sum_{ijkqrs} \hat{h}_{ijkqr} \mu_{ijkqrs}^6 \hat{g}_s + \frac{1}{144} \sum_{ijkqrstw} \hat{h}_{ijk} \hat{h}_{qrst} \mu_{ijkqrstw}^8 \hat{g}_w - \frac{1}{1296} \sum_{ijkqrstwv\beta} \hat{h}_{ijk} \hat{h}_{qrs} \hat{h}_{twv} \mu_{ijkqrstwv\beta}^{10} \hat{g}_\beta - \frac{1}{24} \frac{\sum_{ijkqrs} \hat{h}_{ijkq} \mu_{ijkqrs}^6 \hat{b}_{D,s} \hat{g}_r}{\hat{b}_D} + \frac{1}{72} \frac{\sum_{ijkqrstw} \hat{h}_{ijk} \hat{h}_{qrs} \mu_{ijkqrstw}^8 \hat{b}_{D,w} \hat{g}_t}{\hat{b}_D} - \frac{1}{12} \frac{\sum_{ijk\zeta\eta\xi} \hat{h}_{ijk} \mu_{ijkqrs}^6 \hat{b}_{D,\eta\xi} \hat{g}_\zeta}{\hat{b}_D} + \frac{1}{6} \frac{\sum_{\zeta\eta\xi\omega} \mu_{\zeta\eta\xi\omega}^4 \hat{b}_{D,\eta\xi\omega} \hat{g}_\zeta}{\hat{b}_D} - \frac{1}{48} \sum_{ijkqrs} \hat{h}_{ijkq} \mu_{ijkqrs}^6 \hat{g}_{rs} + \frac{1}{144} \sum_{ijkqrstw} \hat{h}_{ijk} \hat{h}_{qrs} \mu_{ijkqrs}^8 \hat{g}_{tw} - \frac{1}{36} \sum_{ijk\zeta\eta\xi} \hat{h}_{ijk} \mu_{ijk\zeta\eta\xi}^6 \hat{g}_{\zeta\eta\xi} \hat{g}_{\zeta\eta\xi} + \frac{1}{24} \sum_{\zeta\eta\xi\omega} \mu_{\zeta\eta\xi\omega}^4 \hat{g}_{\zeta\eta\xi\omega} - \frac{1}{12} \frac{\sum_{ijk\zeta\eta\xi} \hat{h}_{ijk} \mu_{ijkqrs}^6 \hat{g}_{\zeta\eta}\hat{b}_{D,\xi} + \frac{1}{6} \frac{\sum_{\zeta\eta\xi\omega} \mu_{\zeta\eta\xi\omega}^4 \hat{g}_{\zeta\eta\xi\omega} \hat{g}_{
$$

$$
B_4 = \frac{1}{2}\sum_{ij}\hat{\sigma}_{ij}\frac{\hat{b}_{D,ij}}{\hat{b}_D} - \frac{1}{6}\sum_{ijkq}\hat{h}_{ijk}\mu_{ijkq}^4\frac{\hat{b}_{D,q}}{\hat{b}_D} + \frac{1}{72}\sum_{ijkqrs}\hat{h}_{ijk}\hat{h}_{qrs}\mu_{ijkqrs}^6 - \frac{1}{24}\sum_{ijkq}\hat{h}_{ijkq}\mu_{ijkq}^4.
$$

<span id="page-24-0"></span>**Lemma A.2** (*The Generalized Isserlis Theorem*). *If*  $A = \{\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_{2N}\}\$  *is a set of integers such that*  $1 \leq \alpha_i \leq P$ , for each  $i \in [1,2N]$  and  $X \in R^P$  is a zero mean multivariate normal random vector then

<span id="page-24-3"></span>
$$
EX_A = \sum_A \Pi E \left( X_i X_j \right), \tag{48}
$$

 $N$ *k*  $X_A = \prod_{\alpha_i \in A} X_{\alpha_i}$  and the notation  $\Sigma \Pi$  means summing over all distinct ways of partitioning  $X_{\alpha_1},\ldots,X_{\alpha_{2N}}$  into pairs  $(X_i, X_j)$  and each summand is the product of the N pairs. This yields  $(2N)!/(2^N N!) = (2N-1)!!$  terms in the sum where  $(2N - 1)!!$  *is the double factorial such that*  $(2N - 1)!! = (2N - 1)(2N - 3)...1$ .

The [Isserlis](#page-43-56) theorem, first obtained by Isserlis [\(1918](#page-43-56)), expresses the higher-order moments of a zero-mean Gaussian vector in terms of its covariance matrix. The generalized Isserlis theorem is due to [Withers](#page-44-13) [\(1985](#page-44-13)) and [Vignat](#page-44-14) [\(2012\)](#page-44-14). For instance, let  $A = \{1, 1, 2, 4\}$ , we have

$$
EX_A = E(X_1^2 X_2 X_4) = \sum_A \Pi E(X_i X_j) = E(X_1^2) E(X_2 X_4) + 2E(X_1 X_2) E(X_1 X_4).
$$

Next, we introduce some useful matrix properties about the vectorization operator.

<span id="page-24-4"></span><span id="page-24-1"></span>
$$
(B \otimes C) (D \otimes E) = BD \otimes CE \tag{49}
$$

for four matrices *B*, *C*, *D*, and *E* if *BD* and *CE* exist.

<span id="page-24-2"></span>
$$
vec(BCD) = (D' \otimes B) vec(C)
$$
\n(50)

for three matrices *B*, *C*, and *D* if the product *BCD* is defined. And the property between the vectorization operator and trace operator

$$
tr(A'BCD') = vec (A)' (D \otimes B) vec (C).
$$
\n(51)

On the basis of [Lemma](#page-23-0) [A.1,](#page-23-0) [A.2,](#page-24-0) ([49](#page-24-1))–[\(51\)](#page-24-2) in the following, we prove [Lemma](#page-9-0) [3.2](#page-9-0).

**Proof.** First, we define a function  $\bf g$  ( $\theta$ )  $=\theta$ , and each element of  $\bf g$  ( $\theta$ ) is given as  $g_z$  ( $\theta$ )  $=\theta_z$ ,  $z=1,\ldots,P.$  Denote  $\bf g^{(1)}$ , a *P* × *P* matrix, is the first-order derivative of **g** evaluated at  $\theta$  and  $\mathbf{g}_{z}^{(1)}$  is the  $z_{th}$  column of  $\mathbf{g}^{(1)}$ . Note that since  $\mathbf{g}(\theta) = \theta$ ,  $\mathbf{g}^{(1)} = \mathbf{I}_P$  which is the  $P \times P$  identity matrix.

For  $z = 1, \ldots, P$ ,  $g_z(\theta)$  is a real-valued function. Hence, using [Lemma](#page-23-0) [A.1,](#page-23-0) we can get that for each z

$$
\frac{\int g_z(\boldsymbol{\theta})b_D(\boldsymbol{\theta})\exp\left(-nh_n(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right)d\boldsymbol{\theta}}{\int b_D(\boldsymbol{\theta})\exp\left(-nh_n(\boldsymbol{\theta})\right)d\boldsymbol{\theta}}=g_z(\boldsymbol{\theta}_n)+\frac{1}{n}B_{1,z}^1+\frac{1}{n^2}\left(B_{2,z}^1-B_{3,z}^1\right)+O_p\left(\frac{1}{n^3}\right),
$$

Then, in the matrix form, we get

$$
\frac{\int g(\theta) b_D(\theta) \exp(-nh_n(\theta)) d\theta}{\int b_D(\theta) \exp(-nh_n(\theta)) d\theta} = g(\hat{\theta}) + \frac{1}{n}B_1^1 + \frac{1}{n^2}(B_2^1 - B_3^1) + O_p\left(\frac{1}{n^3}\right).
$$

For each *z*, note that  $g_{z,ij} = \frac{\partial g^2_z(\theta)}{\partial \theta \partial \theta'}|_{ij}$   $=$   $\mathbf{0}_{ij}.$  Following [Lemma](#page-23-0) [A.1,](#page-23-0) we have

$$
B_{1,z}^1 = 0 + \sum_{ij} \hat{g}_{z,i} \hat{\sigma}_{ij} \frac{\hat{b}_{D,j}}{\hat{b}_D} - \frac{1}{6} \sum_{ijkq} \hat{h}_{ijk} \mu_{ijkq}^4 \hat{g}_{z,q}.
$$

Thus, in the matrix form, we have

<span id="page-25-2"></span>
$$
B_1^1 = \sum_{ij} \hat{\mathbf{g}}_{.i}^{(1)} \hat{\sigma}_{ij} \frac{\hat{b}_{D,j}}{\hat{b}_D} - \frac{1}{2} \sum_{ijklq} \hat{\mathbf{g}}_{.q}^{(1)} \hat{h}_{ijk} \hat{\sigma}_{ij} \hat{\sigma}_{kq} = \sum_{ij} \hat{\mathbf{g}}_{.i}^{(1)} \hat{\sigma}_{ij} \frac{\hat{b}_{D,j}}{\hat{b}_D} - \frac{1}{2} \sum_{ijklq} \hat{\mathbf{g}}_{.q}^{(1)} \hat{\sigma}_{qk} \hat{h}_{ijk} \hat{\sigma}_{ij}
$$
  
=  $\hat{\mathbf{g}}^{(1)} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \frac{\hat{b}_D^{(1)}}{\hat{b}_D} - \frac{1}{2} \hat{\mathbf{g}}^{(1)} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(3)'} \text{vec} \left( \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right),$  (52)

Hence, we get

$$
B_1^1 = \hat{h}^{(-2)} \frac{\hat{b}_D^{(1)}}{\hat{b}_D} - \frac{1}{2} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(3)\prime} \, \text{vec}\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right). \tag{53}
$$

Furthermore, for each *z*

<span id="page-25-0"></span>
$$
B_{2,z}^{1} = -\frac{1}{120} \sum_{ijkqrs} \hat{h}_{ijkqrs} \mu_{ijkqrs}^{6} \hat{g}_{z,s} + \frac{1}{144} \sum_{ijkqrstw} \hat{h}_{ijk} \hat{h}_{qrs} \mu_{ijkqrsw}^{8} \hat{g}_{z,w} - \frac{1}{1296} \sum_{ijkqrstwv\beta} \hat{h}_{ijk} \hat{h}_{qrs} \hat{h}_{twv} \mu_{ijkqrstwv\beta}^{10} \hat{g}_{z,\beta} - \frac{1}{24} \frac{\sum_{ijkqrs} \hat{h}_{ijkq} \mu_{ijkqrs}^{6} \hat{b}_{D,s} \hat{g}_{z,r}}{\hat{b}_{D}} + \frac{1}{72} \frac{\sum_{ijkqrstw} \hat{h}_{ijk} \hat{h}_{qrs} \mu_{ijkqrstw}^{8} \hat{b}_{D,w} \hat{g}_{z,t}}{\hat{b}_{D}} - \frac{1}{12} \frac{\sum_{ijkqrs} \hat{h}_{ijk} \mu_{ijkq}^{6} \hat{b}_{D,\eta\xi} \hat{g}_{z,\zeta}}{\hat{b}_{D}} + \frac{1}{6} \frac{\sum_{\zeta\eta\xi\omega} \mu_{\zeta\eta\xi\omega}^{4} \hat{b}_{D,\eta\xi\omega} \hat{g}_{z,\zeta}}{\hat{b}_{D}}.
$$

Thus, in the matrix form, we have

$$
B_2^1 = -\frac{1}{120} \sum_{ijkqrs} \hat{g}_{s} \hat{h}_{ijkqrs} \mu_{ijkqrs}^6 + \frac{1}{144} \sum_{ijkqrstw} \hat{g}_{w} \hat{h}_{ijk} \hat{h}_{qrst} \mu_{ijkqrstw}^8
$$
  

$$
- \frac{1}{1296} \sum_{ijkqrstwv\beta} \hat{g}_{r} \hat{h}_{ijk} \hat{h}_{qrs} \hat{h}_{twv} \mu_{ijkqrstwv\beta}^{10} - \frac{1}{24} \frac{\sum_{ijkqrs} \hat{g}_{r} \hat{h}_{jikq} \mu_{ijkqrs}^6 \hat{b}_{D,s}}{\hat{b}_{D}}
$$
  

$$
+ \frac{1}{72} \frac{\sum_{ijkqrstw} \hat{g}_{r} \hat{h}_{ijk} \hat{h}_{qrs} \mu_{ijkqrstw}^8 \hat{b}_{D,w}}{\hat{b}_{D}} - \frac{1}{12} \frac{\sum_{ijkqrs} \hat{g}_{r} \hat{h}_{ijk} \mu_{ijkqrs}^6 \hat{b}_{D,\eta\xi}}{\hat{b}_{D}}
$$
  

$$
+ \frac{1}{6} \frac{\sum_{jqrs} \hat{g}_{r} \hat{c}_{r} \mu_{jqrsw}^4 \hat{b}_{D,\eta\xi\omega}}{\hat{b}_{D}}.
$$
  
(54)

We can write each item on the right-hand side of  $(54)$  $(54)$  $(54)$  in the matrix form using  $(48)$  $(48)$ , that is,

<span id="page-25-1"></span>
$$
-\frac{1}{120} \sum_{ijkqrs} \hat{g}_{.s} \hat{h}_{ijkqrs} \mu_{ijkqrs}^6 = -\frac{1}{8} \sum_{ijkqrs} \hat{g}_{.s} \hat{\sigma}_{sr} \hat{h}_{ijkqrs} \hat{\sigma}_{ij} \hat{\sigma}_{kq} = -\frac{1}{8} \hat{g}^{(1)} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(5)'} \nu e c \left[ \hat{h}^{(-2)} \otimes \nu e c \left( \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right) \right],
$$
  
\n
$$
-\frac{1}{144} \sum_{ijkqrs} \hat{g}_{.w} \hat{h}_{ijk} \hat{h}_{qrs} \mu_{ijkqrs}^8
$$
\n
$$
= \frac{1}{4} \hat{g}^{(1)} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(4)'} \left[ \nu e c \left( \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right) \otimes \left( \nu e c \left( \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right)' \hat{h}^{(3)} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right)' \right]
$$
\n
$$
+\frac{1}{6} \hat{g}^{(1)} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(4)'} \left[ \hat{h}^{(-2)} \otimes \hat{h}^{(-2)} \otimes \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right] \nu e c \left( \hat{h}^{(3)} \right)
$$
\n
$$
+\frac{1}{16} \hat{g}^{(1)} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(3)'} \nu e c \left( \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right) \mathbf{tr} \left[ \left( \hat{h}^{(-2)} \otimes \nu e c \left( \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right) \right)' \hat{h}^{(4)} \right]
$$

$$
+\frac{1}{4}\hat{g}^{(1)}\hat{h}^{(-2)}\hat{h}^{(3)*}\text{vec}\left(\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\otimes\text{vec}\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)'\right)\hat{h}^{(4)}\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right),
$$
\n
$$
-\frac{1}{1296}\sum_{ijkqrs'wp\beta} \hat{g}_{;\beta}\hat{h}_{ijk}h_{\alpha\beta}\hat{h}_{\alpha\gamma}\hat{h}_{\alpha\nu\beta}
$$
\n
$$
=\frac{3}{8}\hat{g}^{(1)}\hat{h}^{(-2)}\hat{h}^{(3)*}\left[\hat{h}^{(-2)}\otimes\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right]\hat{h}^{(3)}\hat{h}^{(-2)}\hat{h}^{(3)*}\text{vec}\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)
$$
\n
$$
-\frac{1}{4}\hat{g}^{(1)}\hat{h}^{(-2)}\hat{h}^{(3)*}\text{vec}\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\otimes\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)\text{vec}\left(\hat{h}^{(3)}\right)\left[\hat{h}^{(-2)}\otimes\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right]\hat{h}^{(3)}\text{vec}\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)\right]
$$
\n
$$
-\frac{1}{16}\hat{g}^{(1)}\hat{h}^{(-2)}\hat{h}^{(3)*}\text{vec}\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)\text{vec}\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)\hat{h}^{(3)}\hat{h}^{(-2)}\hat{h}^{(3)*}\text{vec}\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)\right]
$$
\n
$$
-\frac{1}{24}\hat{g}^{(1)}\hat{h}^{(-2)}\hat{h}^{(3)*}\text{vec}\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)\text{vec}\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)\left[\hat{h}^{(-2)}\otimes\hat{h}^{(-2)}\otimes\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right]\text{vec}\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)\text{vec}\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right),
$$
\n
$$
-\frac{1}{24}\hat{g}^{(1)}\hat{h}^{(-2)}\hat{h}^{(1)}\text{vec}\left(\hat{h}_{\text{gen}}\hat{h}_{
$$

Hence, we have

<span id="page-26-0"></span>
$$
B_2^1 = -\frac{1}{8} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(5)'} \text{vec}\left[\hat{h}^{(-2)} \otimes \text{vec}\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)\right] + \frac{1}{4} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(4)'} \left[\text{vec}\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right) \otimes \left(\text{vec}\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)' \hat{h}^{(3)} \hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)'\right] + \frac{1}{6} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(4)'} \left[\hat{h}^{(-2)} \otimes \hat{h}^{(-2)} \otimes \hat{h}^{(-2)}\right] \text{vec}\left(\hat{h}^{(3)}\right)
$$
(55)

+ 
$$
\frac{1}{16} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(3)} \text{vec}( \hat{h}^{(-2)} ) \text{tr} \left[ \left( \hat{h}^{(-2)} \otimes \text{vec} \left( \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right) \right) \hat{h}^{(4)} \right]
$$
  
+  $\frac{1}{4} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(3)} \text{vec}( \left( \left( \hat{h}^{(-2)} \otimes \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right) \right) \hat{h}^{(3)} \hat{h}^{(-2)} )$   
-  $\frac{3}{8} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(3)} \left[ \hat{h}^{(-2)} \otimes \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right] \hat{h}^{(3)} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(3)} \text{vec}( \left( \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right) )$   
-  $\frac{1}{4} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(3)} \left[ \hat{h}^{(-2)} \otimes \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right] \text{vec}( \hat{h}^{(3)} \left[ \hat{h}^{(-2)} \otimes \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right] \hat{h}^{(3)} )$   
-  $\frac{1}{16} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(3)} \text{vec}( \left( \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right) \left[ \text{vec}( \hat{h}^{(3)} \right] \left[ \hat{h}^{(-2)} \otimes \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right] \hat{h}^{(3)} \text{vec}( \hat{h}^{(-2)} ) \right]$   
-  $\frac{1}{24} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(3)} \text{vec}( \left( \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right) \text{vec}( \hat{h}^{(3)} ) \left[ \hat{h}^{(-2)} \otimes \hat{h}^{(-2)} \otimes \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right] \text{vec}( \hat{h}^{(3)} )$   
-  $\frac{1}{2} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(4)} \left[ \text{vec}( \hat{h}^{(-2)} \otimes \text{vec}( \hat{h}^{(-2)} ) \right] \hat{h}^{(4)} \right]$   
-  $\frac{1}{2} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{$ 

For  $B_3^1$ , following [Lemma](#page-23-0) [A.1](#page-23-0), note that, for any element *z*,  $B_{4,z}^1=B_4^1$  which is a constant and independent of *z*. We have

<span id="page-27-4"></span><span id="page-27-0"></span>
$$
B_3^1 = B_1^1 \times B_4^1,\tag{56}
$$

where

$$
B_4^1 = \frac{1}{2} \sum_{ij} \hat{\sigma}_{ij} \frac{\hat{b}_{D,ij}}{\hat{b}_D} - \frac{1}{6} \sum_{ijkq} \hat{h}_{ijk} \mu_{ijkq}^4 \frac{\hat{b}_{D,q}}{\hat{b}_D} + \frac{1}{72} \sum_{ijkqrs} \hat{h}_{ijk} \hat{h}_{qrs} \mu_{ijkqrs}^6 - \frac{1}{24} \sum_{ijkq} \hat{h}_{ijkq} \mu_{ijkq}^4.
$$
 (57)

We can write each item on the right-hand side of ([57](#page-27-0)) as

$$
\frac{1}{2} \sum_{ij} \hat{\sigma}_{ij} \frac{\hat{b}_{D,ij}}{\hat{b}_D} = \frac{1}{2} \mathbf{tr} \left[ \hat{h}^{(-2)} \frac{\hat{b}_D^{(2)}}{\hat{b}_D} \right],\tag{58}
$$

$$
-\frac{1}{6} \sum_{ijkl} \hat{h}_{ijk} \mu_{ijkl}^4 \frac{\hat{b}_{D,q}}{\hat{b}_D} = -\frac{3}{6} \sum_{ijkl} \hat{h}_{ijk} \hat{\sigma}_{ij} \hat{\sigma}_{kq} \frac{\hat{b}_{D,q}}{\hat{b}_D} = -\frac{1}{2} \nu e c \left( \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right)^{\prime} \hat{h}^{(-3)} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \frac{\hat{b}_D^{(1)}}{\hat{b}_D}, \tag{59}
$$

<span id="page-27-3"></span><span id="page-27-2"></span><span id="page-27-1"></span>
$$
\frac{1}{72} \sum_{\text{ijk} \text{qrs}} \hat{h}_{\text{ijk}} \hat{h}_{\text{qrs}} \mu_{\text{ijk} \text{qrs}}^6 \tag{60}
$$

$$
= \frac{1}{8} \nu e c \left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)' \hat{h}^{(3)} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(3)\prime} \nu e c \left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right) + \frac{1}{12} \nu e c \left(\hat{h}^{(3)}\right)' \left[\hat{h}^{(-2)} \otimes \hat{h}^{(-2)} \otimes \hat{h}^{(-2)}\right] \nu e c \left(\hat{h}^{(3)}\right),
$$
  

$$
- \frac{1}{24} \sum_{ijkl} \hat{h}_{ijkl} \mu_{ijkl}^4 = - \frac{3}{24} \sum_{ijkl} \hat{h}_{ijkl} \hat{\sigma}_{ij} \hat{\sigma}_{kl} = - \frac{1}{8} \text{tr} \left[ \left[\hat{h}^{(-2)} \otimes \nu e c \left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)\right] \hat{h}^{(4)\prime} \right].
$$
 (61)

From ([57](#page-27-0)), [\(58\)](#page-27-1), ([59](#page-27-2)), ([60\)](#page-27-3), [\(61\)](#page-28-1), in the matrix form, we have

$$
B_4^1 = \frac{1}{2} \text{tr} \left[ \hat{h}^{(-2)} \frac{\hat{b}_D^{(2)}}{\hat{b}_D} \right] - \frac{1}{2} \text{vec} \left( \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right)' \hat{h}^{(-3)} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \frac{\hat{b}_D^{(1)}}{\hat{b}_D} + \frac{1}{8} \text{vec} \left( \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right)' \hat{h}^{(3)} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(3)} \text{vec} \left( \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right) + \frac{1}{12} \text{vec} \left( \hat{h}^{(3)} \right)' \left[ \hat{h}^{(-2)} \otimes \hat{h}^{(-2)} \otimes \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right] \text{vec} \left( \hat{h}^{(3)} \right) - \frac{1}{8} \text{tr} \left[ \left[ \hat{h}^{(-2)} \otimes \text{vec} \left( \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right) \right] \hat{h}^{(4)} \right].
$$
\n(62)

From ([52](#page-25-2)), [\(56\)](#page-27-4) and ([56](#page-27-4)), we have

<span id="page-28-0"></span>
$$
\overline{\theta} = \hat{\theta} + \frac{1}{n}B_1^1 + \frac{1}{n^2}(B_2^1 - B_3^1) + O_p\left(\frac{1}{n^3}\right) = \hat{\theta} + \frac{1}{n}B_1^1 + \frac{1}{n^2}(B_2^1 - B_4^1B_1^1) + O_p\left(\frac{1}{n^3}\right).
$$

This ends the proof for the first part of the lemma.

In the following, we prove the second part of the lemma. Define a function  $\mathbf{f}(\theta) = vec(\theta \theta')$  which is a  $P^2 \times 1$ vector. Hence, we can get the first and second derivatives of **f** with respect to  $\theta$  as  ${\bf f}^{(1)}(\theta) \:=\: \theta\otimes {\bf I}_P + {\bf I}_P\otimes \theta$  and  ${\bf f}^{(2)}\left( \theta \right)=(\mathbf{K}_{PP}\otimes \mathbf{I}_P)\left[ \mathbf{I}_P\otimes \textit{vec}\left( \mathbf{I}_P \right) \right] +\left[ \textit{vec}\left( \mathbf{I}_P \right)\otimes \mathbf{I}_P \right]$  following [Magnus and Neudecker](#page-43-55) [\(1999\)](#page-43-55), where  $\mathbf{K}_{mn}$  is a commutation matrix, which is defined by  $K_{mn}$ *vecA* = *vecA'* for a  $m \times n$  matrix *A*. If  $m = n$ ,  $K_{mn}$  is simplified as  $K_m$ . By properties of commutation matrix, we have

$$
\mathbf{K}_{mn} \left( Y \otimes x \right) = x \otimes Y, \tag{63}
$$

$$
(Y \otimes x')\mathbf{K}_{sm} = x' \otimes Y, \tag{64}
$$

where *Y* is an  $n \times s$  matrix, *x* is an  $m \times 1$  vector. Furthermore, for any matrix  $A_1$  and  $A_2$ , if  $A_1$  is an  $n \times s$  dimensional matrix and  $A_2$  is an  $m \times t$  dimensional matrix, then,

$$
\mathbf{K}_{mn} \left( A_1 \otimes A_2 \right) = \left( A_2 \otimes A_1 \right) \mathbf{K}_{ts}.\tag{65}
$$

<span id="page-28-2"></span><span id="page-28-1"></span>.

For more details about matrix properties, one can refer to [Magnus and Neudecker](#page-43-55) [\(1999\)](#page-43-55).

Following [Lemma](#page-23-0) [A.1](#page-23-0), since each element  $f_z(\theta)$  is a real-valued function, we have

$$
\frac{\int f_z(\boldsymbol{\theta}) b_D(\boldsymbol{\theta}) \exp(-nh_n(\boldsymbol{\theta})) d\boldsymbol{\theta}}{\int b_D(\boldsymbol{\theta}) \exp(-nh_n(\boldsymbol{\theta})) d\boldsymbol{\theta}} = f_z(\boldsymbol{\hat{\theta}}) + \frac{1}{n} B_{1,z}^2 + \frac{1}{n^2} (B_{2,z}^2 - B_{3,z}^2) + O_p\left(\frac{1}{n^3}\right)
$$

Again, we can rewrite it in the matrix form,

$$
\frac{\int \mathbf{f}(\theta) b_D(\theta) \exp(-n h_n(\theta)) d\theta}{\int b_D(\theta) \exp(-n h_n(\theta)) d\theta} = \mathbf{f}(\theta) + \frac{1}{n} B_1^2 + \frac{1}{n^2} (B_2^2 - B_3^2) + O_p\left(\frac{1}{n^3}\right).
$$

For each *z*, we have

$$
B_{1,z}^2 = \frac{1}{2} \sum_{ij} \hat{\sigma}_{ij} \hat{f}_{z,ij} + \sum_{ij} \hat{f}_{z,i} \hat{\sigma}_{ij} \frac{\hat{b}_{D,j}}{\hat{b}_D} - \frac{1}{6} \sum_{ijkq} \hat{h}_{ijk} \mu_{ijkq}^4 \hat{f}_{z,q}.
$$

Thus, in the matrix form

$$
B_1^2 = \frac{1}{2} \left[ \mathbf{I}_{p2} \otimes vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)' \right] vec\left(\hat{\mathbf{f}}^{(2)\prime} \mathbf{K}_{pp2}\right) + \sum_{ij} \hat{\mathbf{f}}_{i}^{(1)} \hat{\sigma}_{ij} \frac{\hat{b}_{D,j}}{\hat{b}_{D}} - \frac{1}{2} \sum_{ijkq} \hat{\mathbf{f}}_{q}^{(1)} \hat{h}_{ijk} \hat{\sigma}_{ij} \hat{\sigma}_{kq}.
$$
 (66)

Note that

$$
\begin{aligned}\n&\left[\mathbf{I}_{p2} \otimes vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)'\right] vec\left(\hat{\mathbf{f}}^{(2)}'\mathbf{K}_{pp2}\right) \\
&= \left[\mathbf{I}_{p2} \otimes vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)'\right] vec\left(\left[\mathbf{I}_{p} \otimes vec\left(\mathbf{I}_{p}\right)'\right] (\mathbf{K}_{pp} \otimes \mathbf{I}_{p}) \mathbf{K}_{pp2}\right) \\
&+ \left[\mathbf{I}_{p2} \otimes vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)'\right] vec\left(\left[vec\left(\mathbf{I}_{p} \otimes \mathbf{I}_{p}\right)' \otimes \mathbf{I}_{p}\right] \mathbf{K}_{pp2}\right)\n\end{aligned}
$$

where

<span id="page-29-0"></span>
$$
\begin{aligned}\n&\left[\mathbf{I}_{p2} \otimes vec \left(\sum_{ij} \hat{\sigma}_{ij} e_{i} e_{j}'\right)^{'}\right] vec \left([\mathbf{I}_{P} \otimes vec (\mathbf{I}_{P})^{'}\right] \mathbf{K}_{pp2} (\mathbf{I}_{P} \otimes \mathbf{K}_{PP})\right] \\
&= \sum_{ij} \hat{\sigma}_{ij} \left[\left(\mathbf{I}_{p2} \otimes e_{j}' \otimes e_{i}'\right) \left((\mathbf{I}_{P} \otimes \mathbf{K}_{PP}) \otimes [\mathbf{I}_{P} \otimes vec (\mathbf{I}_{P})^{'}]\right] vec(\mathbf{K}_{pp2})\right] \\
&= \sum_{ij} \hat{\sigma}_{ij} \left[\left((\mathbf{I}_{p2} \otimes e_{j}') \left(\mathbf{I}_{P} \otimes \mathbf{K}_{PP}\right)\right) \otimes \left(e_{i}' \left[\mathbf{I}_{P} \otimes vec (\mathbf{I}_{P})^{'}\right]\right] vec(\mathbf{K}_{pp2})\right] \\
&= \sum_{ij} \hat{\sigma}_{ij} \left[\left[(\mathbf{I}_{P} \otimes \mathbf{I}_{P} \otimes e_{j}') \left(\mathbf{I}_{P} \otimes \mathbf{K}_{PP}\right)\right] \otimes \left(e_{i}' \otimes vec (\mathbf{I}_{P})^{'}\right] vec(\mathbf{K}_{pp2})\right] \\
&= \sum_{ij} \hat{\sigma}_{ij} \left[\left[\mathbf{I}_{P} \otimes (e_{j}' \otimes \mathbf{I}_{P})\right] \otimes (e_{i}' \otimes vec (\mathbf{I}_{P})^{'}\right] vec(\mathbf{K}_{pp2})\right] \\
&= \sum_{ij} \hat{\sigma}_{ij} vec \left[\left(e_{i}' \otimes vec (\mathbf{I}_{P})^{'}\right) \mathbf{K}_{pp2} (\mathbf{I}_{P} \otimes e_{j} \otimes \mathbf{I}_{P})\right] \\
&= \sum_{ij} \hat{\sigma}_{ij} vec \left[\left(vec(\text{vec} (\mathbf{I}_{P})^{'} \otimes e_{i}') \left(\mathbf{I}_{P} \otimes e_{j} \otimes \mathbf{I}_{P}\right)\right] = \sum_{ij} \hat{\sigma}_{ij} vec \left[\left(vec(\text{vec} (\mathbf{I}_{P})^{'} \otimes e_{j}') \right) \otimes e_{i}'\right] \\
&= \sum_{ij} \hat{\sigma}_{ij} vec \left[\left((\
$$

and

<span id="page-29-1"></span>
$$
\begin{aligned}\n&\left[\mathbf{I}_{p2} \otimes vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)'\right] vec\left(\left[vec\left(1_{p2} \otimes e'_{j} \otimes e'_{j}\right) \mathbf{I}_{p}\right] \mathbf{K}_{pp2}\right) \\
&= \sum_{ij} \hat{\sigma}_{ij} \left[\left(\mathbf{I}_{p2} \otimes e'_{j} \otimes e'_{i}\right) \left(\mathbf{I}_{p3} \otimes vec\left(\mathbf{I}_{p}\right)' \otimes \mathbf{I}_{p}\right)\right] vec(\mathbf{K}_{pp2}) \\
&= \sum_{ij} \hat{\sigma}_{ij} \left[\left(\mathbf{I}_{p2} \otimes e'_{j}\right) \otimes (vec\left(\mathbf{I}_{p}\right)' \otimes e'_{i}\right)\right] vec(\mathbf{K}_{pp2}) \\
&= \sum_{ij} \hat{\sigma}_{ij} vec\left[\left(vec\left(1_{p2} \otimes e'_{j}\right) \otimes e'_{i}\right) \mathbf{K}_{pp2} \left(\mathbf{I}_{p2} \otimes e_{j}\right)\right] = \sum_{ij} \hat{\sigma}_{ij} vec\left[\sum_{s} \left(e'_{s} \otimes e'_{s} \otimes e'_{i}\right) \left(e_{j} \otimes \mathbf{I}_{p2}\right)\right] \\
&= \sum_{ij} \hat{\sigma}_{ij} vec\left[\sum_{s} e'_{s} e_{j} \left(e'_{s} \otimes e'_{i}\right)\right] = \sum_{ij} \hat{\sigma}_{ij} \sum_{s} vec\left(e_{i} e'_{j} e_{s} e'_{s}\right) \\
&= \sum_{ij} \hat{\sigma}_{ij} vec\left(e_{i} e'_{j} \sum_{s} e_{s} e'_{s}\right) = \sum_{ij} \hat{\sigma}_{ij} vec\left(e_{i} e'_{j}\right) = vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right) \\
&= 0) \text{ and (51). Then from (67) and (68), we have}\n\end{aligned}
$$

by  $(50)$  and  $(51)$  $(51)$  $(51)$ . Then from  $(67)$  and  $(68)$  $(68)$  $(68)$ , we have

$$
\left[\mathbf{I}_{p2} \otimes vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)'\right] vec\left(\hat{\mathbf{f}}^{(2)'}\mathbf{K}_{pp2}\right) = vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right) + vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)'}\right).
$$
\n(69)

Moreover, from [\(66\)](#page-28-2)

<span id="page-29-2"></span>
$$
B_1^2 = vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right) + \hat{\mathbf{f}}^{(1)}\hat{h}^{(-2)}\frac{\hat{b}_D^{(1)}}{\hat{b}_D} - \frac{1}{2}\hat{\mathbf{f}}^{(1)}\hat{h}^{(-2)}\hat{h}^{(-3)'}\text{vec}\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right) = vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right) + \hat{\mathbf{f}}^{(1)}B_1^1.
$$
\n(70)

And for each *z*

$$
B_{2,z}^2 = -\frac{1}{120} \sum_{ijkqrs} \hat{h}_{ijkqr} \mu_{ijkqrs}^6 \hat{f}_{z,s} + \frac{1}{144} \sum_{ijkqrstw} \hat{h}_{ijk} \hat{h}_{qrst} \mu_{ijkqrstw}^8 \hat{f}_{z,w}
$$
  

$$
- \frac{1}{1296} \sum_{ijkqrstwv\beta} \hat{h}_{ijk} \hat{h}_{qrs} \hat{h}_{t wv} \mu_{ijkqrstwv\beta}^{10} \hat{f}_{z,\beta} - \frac{1}{24} \frac{\sum_{ijkqrs} \hat{h}_{ijkq} \mu_{ijkqrs}^6 \hat{b}_{D,s} \hat{f}_{z,r}}{\hat{b}_{D}}
$$
  

$$
+ \frac{1}{72} \frac{\sum_{ijkqrstw} \hat{h}_{ijk} \hat{h}_{qrs} \mu_{ijkqrstw}^8 \hat{b}_{D,w} \hat{f}_{z,t}}{\hat{b}_{D}} - \frac{1}{12} \frac{\sum_{ijkqrs} \hat{h}_{ijk} \mu_{ijkqrs}^6 \hat{b}_{D,\eta\xi} \hat{f}_{z,\zeta}}{\hat{b}_{D}}
$$

$$
+\frac{1}{6}\frac{\sum_{\zeta\eta\xi\omega}\mu_{\zeta\eta\xi\omega}^4\hat{b}_{D,\eta\xi\omega}\hat{f}_{z,\zeta}}{\hat{b}_D}-\frac{1}{48}\sum_{ijkqrs}\widehat{h}_{ijkq}\mu_{ijkqrs}^6\hat{f}_{z,rs} +\frac{1}{144}\sum_{ijkqrst w}\widehat{h}_{ijk}\widehat{h}_{qrs}\mu_{ijkqrst w}^8\hat{f}_{z,tw}-\frac{1}{12}\frac{\sum_{ijk\zeta\eta\xi}\widehat{h}_{ijk}\mu_{ijk\zeta\eta\xi}^6\hat{f}_{z,\zeta\eta}\widehat{b}_{D,\xi}}{\widehat{b}_D} +\frac{1}{4}\frac{\sum_{\zeta\eta\xi\omega}\mu_{\zeta\eta\xi\omega}^4\hat{f}_{z,\zeta\eta}\widehat{b}_{D,\xi\omega}}{\widehat{b}_D}.
$$

Let  $B_{2,z}^2 = B_{21,z}^2 + B_{22,z}^2$ , where

$$
B_{21,z}^{2} = -\frac{1}{120} \sum_{ijkqrs} \hat{h}_{ijkqrs} \mu_{ijkqrs}^{6} \hat{f}_{z,s} + \frac{1}{144} \sum_{ijkqrstw} \hat{h}_{ijk} \hat{h}_{qrs} \mu_{ijkqrstw}^{8} \hat{f}_{z,w}
$$
  
\n
$$
- \frac{1}{1296} \sum_{ijkqrstwv\beta} \hat{h}_{ijk} \hat{h}_{qrs} \hat{h}_{twv} \mu_{ijkqrstwv\beta}^{10} \hat{f}_{z,\beta} - \frac{1}{24} \frac{\sum_{ijkqrs} \hat{h}_{ijkq} \mu_{ijkqrs}^{6} \hat{b}_{D,s} \hat{f}_{z,r}}{\hat{b}_{D}}
$$
  
\n
$$
+ \frac{1}{72} \frac{\sum_{ijkqrstw} \hat{h}_{ijk} \hat{h}_{qrs} \mu_{ijkqrstw}^{8} \hat{b}_{D,w} \hat{f}_{z,t}}{\hat{b}_{D}} - \frac{1}{12} \frac{\sum_{ijkqrs} \hat{h}_{ijk} \mu_{ijkqrs}^{6} \hat{b}_{D,n\xi} \hat{f}_{z,s}}{\hat{b}_{D}}
$$
  
\n
$$
+ \frac{1}{6} \frac{\sum_{\zeta\eta\xi\omega} \mu_{\zeta\eta\xi\omega}^{4} \hat{b}_{D,n\xi\omega} \hat{f}_{z,s}}{\hat{b}_{D}},
$$
  
\n
$$
B_{22,z}^{2} = -\frac{1}{48} \sum_{ijkqrs} \hat{h}_{ijkq} \mu_{qrs}^{6} \mu_{ijkqrs}^{8} \hat{f}_{z,rs}
$$
  
\n
$$
+ \frac{1}{144} \sum_{ijkqrstw} \hat{h}_{ijk} \hat{h}_{qrs} \mu_{ijkqrstw}^{8} \hat{f}_{z,tw} - \frac{1}{12} \frac{\sum_{ijkqrs} \hat{h}_{ijk} \mu_{ijkqrs}^{6} \hat{f}_{z,s\eta} \hat{b}_{D,s}}{\hat{b}_{D}}
$$
  
\n
$$
+ \frac{1}{4} \frac{\sum_{\zeta\eta\xi\omega} \mu_{\zeta\eta\xi\omega}^{4} \hat{f}_{z,\zeta\eta} \hat{b}_{D,s\omega}}{\hat{b}_{D}}.
$$

Then, we rewrite them in the matrix form so that we have

<span id="page-30-0"></span>
$$
B_2^2 = B_{21}^2 + B_{22}^2,\tag{71}
$$

where

$$
B_{21}^2 = \hat{\mathbf{f}}^{(1)} B_2^1 = \left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \otimes \mathbf{I}_P + \mathbf{I}_P \otimes \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) B_2^1 = vec\left(B_2^1 \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}' + \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} B_2^{1\prime}\right).
$$
\n(72)

By [Li et al.](#page-43-5) [\(2017\)](#page-43-5)

$$
B_{22}^{2} = -\frac{1}{8} \nu e c \left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right) tr \left[\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)} \otimes \nu e c \left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)'\right) \hat{h}^{(4)}\right] - \frac{1}{4} \nu e c \left[\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)} \otimes \nu e c \left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)'\right) \hat{h}^{(4)} \hat{h}^{(-2)}\right] - \frac{1}{4} \nu e c \left[\hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(4)} \left(\hat{h}^{(-2)} \otimes \nu e c \left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)\right)\right] + \frac{1}{8} \nu e c \left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right) \left[\nu e c \left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)'\hat{h}^{(3)} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(3)} \nu e c \left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)\right] + \frac{1}{12} \nu e c \left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right) tr \left[\hat{h}^{(3)} \left[\hat{h}^{(-2)} \otimes \hat{h}^{(-2)}\right] \hat{h}^{(3)} \hat{h}^{(-2)}\right] + \frac{1}{4} \nu e c \left[\left[\left(\nu e c \left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)'\hat{h}^{(3)} \hat{h}^{(-2)}\right) \otimes \hat{h}^{(-2)}\right] \hat{h}^{(3)} \hat{h}^{(-2)}\right] + \frac{1}{4} \nu e c \left[\hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(3)} \left[\left(\nu e c \left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)'\hat{h}^{(3)} \hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)' \otimes \hat{h}^{(-2)}\right]\right] + \frac{1}{4} \nu e c \left[\hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(3)} \nu e c \left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right) \nu e c \left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)'\hat{h}^{(3)} \hat{h}^{(-2)}\right] + \frac{1}{2} \nu e c \left[\hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(3)} \left[\hat{h}^{(-2)} \otimes \hat{h}^{(-2)}\right] \hat{h}^{(3)} \hat
$$

$$
-\frac{1}{2} \text{vec}\left[\hat{h}^{(-2)}\frac{\hat{b}_{D}^{(1)}}{\hat{b}_{D}}\text{vec}\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)^{'}\hat{h}^{(3)}\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right] - \frac{1}{2} \text{vec}\left[\left[\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\frac{\hat{b}_{D}^{(1)}}{\hat{b}_{D}}\right)^{'}\otimes\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right]\hat{h}^{(3)}\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right] -\frac{1}{2} \text{vec}\left[\hat{h}^{(-2)}\hat{h}^{(3)'}\left[\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\frac{\hat{b}_{D}^{(1)}}{\hat{b}_{D}}\right)\otimes\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right]\right] - \frac{1}{2} \text{vec}\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right) \text{vec}\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)^{'}\hat{h}^{(3)}\hat{h}^{(-2)}\frac{\hat{b}_{D}^{(1)}}{\hat{b}_{D}} +\frac{1}{2} \text{vec}\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right) \text{tr}\left[\hat{h}^{(-2)}\frac{\hat{b}_{D}^{(2)}}{\hat{b}_{D}}\right] + \text{vec}\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\frac{\hat{b}_{D}^{(2)}}{\hat{b}_{D}}\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)
$$
(74)

We can also get

$$
B_3^2 = B_1^2 \times B_4^1 = \left( \nu e c \left( \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right) + \hat{f}^{(1)} B_1^1 \right) B_4^1, \tag{75}
$$

where

<span id="page-31-0"></span>
$$
\hat{\mathbf{f}}^{(1)}B_1^1 = vec\left(B_1^1\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}' + \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}B_1^{1\prime}\right).
$$

Note that

$$
\overline{\theta} = \hat{\theta} + \frac{1}{n} B_1^1 + \frac{1}{n^2} (B_2^1 - B_3^1) + O_p\left(\frac{1}{n^3}\right) \n= \hat{\theta} + \frac{1}{n} B_1^1 + \frac{1}{n^2} (B_2^1 - B_4^1 B_1^1) + O_p\left(\frac{1}{n^3}\right).
$$

Thus, we have

$$
\begin{split} vec\left(\theta \overline{\theta}'\right) &= vec\left(\hat{\theta} \hat{\theta}'\right) + \frac{1}{n} vec\left(\hat{\theta} B_1^{1'} + B_1^1 \hat{\theta}'\right) \\ &+ \frac{1}{n^2} vec\left[\hat{\theta} \left(B_2^1 - B_4^1 B_1^1\right)' + \left(B_2^1 - B_4^1 B_1^1\right) \hat{\theta}' + B_1^1 B_1^{1'}\right] + O_p\left(\frac{1}{n^3}\right). \end{split}
$$

From ([70](#page-29-2)), [\(71\)](#page-30-0) and ([75](#page-31-0)), we can show that

$$
\frac{\int \text{vec}(\theta \theta') b_D(\theta) \exp(-nh_n(\theta)) d\theta}{\int b_D(\theta) \exp(-nh_n(\theta)) d\theta}
$$
\n= vec  $(\hat{\theta} \hat{\theta}') + \frac{1}{n} B_1^2 + \frac{1}{n^2} (B_2^2 - B_3^2) + O_p(\frac{1}{n^3})$   
\n= vec  $(\hat{\theta} \hat{\theta}') + \frac{1}{n} [\text{vec}(\hat{h}^{(-2)}) + \hat{f}^{(1)} B_1^1]$   
\n+  $\frac{1}{n^2} [\hat{f}^{(1)} B_2^1 + B_{22}^2 - B_4^1 (\text{vec}(\hat{h}^{(-2)}) + \hat{f}^{(1)} B_1^1)] + O_p(\frac{1}{n^3})$   
\n= vec  $(\hat{\theta} \hat{\theta}') + \frac{1}{n} [\text{vec}(\hat{h}^{(-2)}) + \text{vec}(\hat{B}_1^1 \hat{\theta}' + \hat{\theta} B_1^1)]$   
\n+  $\frac{1}{n^2} [\text{vec}(\hat{B}_2^2 \hat{\theta}' + \hat{\theta} B_2^1) + B_{22}^2 - B_4^1 (\text{vec}(\hat{h}^{(-2)}) + \text{vec}(\hat{B}_1^1 \hat{\theta}' + \hat{\theta} B_1^1)) ] + O_p(\frac{1}{n^3})$   
\n= vec  $(\hat{\theta} \hat{\theta}') + \frac{1}{n} [\text{vec}(\hat{h}^{(-2)}) + \text{vec}(\hat{B}_1^1 \hat{\theta}' + \hat{\theta} B_1^1)]$   
\n+  $\frac{1}{n^2} [\hat{B}_{22}^2 + \hat{\theta}(\hat{B}_2^1 - B_4^1 B_1^1)' + (\hat{B}_2^1 - B_4^1 B_1^1) \hat{\theta}' - B_4^1 \text{vec}(\hat{h}^{(-2)}) + O_p(\frac{1}{n^3}).$ 

Hence, we have

$$
\frac{\int vec \left[ (\theta - \bar{\theta}) (\theta - \bar{\theta})' \right] b_D (\theta) exp (-nh_n (\theta)) d\theta}{\int b_D (\theta) exp (-nh_n (\theta)) d\theta}
$$
\n
$$
= \frac{\int vec (\theta \theta') b_D (\theta) exp (-nh_n (\theta)) d\theta}{\int b_D (\theta) exp (-nh_n (\theta)) d\theta} - vec (\bar{\theta} \bar{\theta}')
$$
\n
$$
= \frac{1}{n} vec (\hat{h}^{(-2)}) + \frac{1}{n^2} \left[ B_{22}^2 - B_4^1 vec (\hat{h}^{(-2)}) - vec (B_1^1 B_1^1) \right] + O_p \left( \frac{1}{n^3} \right).
$$

Note that

$$
vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)B_4^1
$$
\n
$$
= \frac{1}{2}vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)\operatorname{tr}\left[\hat{h}^{(-2)}\frac{\hat{b}_D^{(2)}}{\hat{b}_D}\right] - \frac{1}{2}vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)'\hat{h}^{(-3)}\hat{h}^{(-2)}\frac{\hat{b}_D^{(1)}}{\hat{b}_D}
$$
\n
$$
+ \frac{1}{8}vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)'\hat{h}^{(3)}\hat{h}^{(-2)}\hat{h}^{(3)'}vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)
$$
\n
$$
+ \frac{1}{12}vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)vec\left(\hat{h}^{(3)}\right)'\left[\hat{h}^{(-2)}\otimes\hat{h}^{(-2)}\otimes\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right]vec\left(\hat{h}^{(3)}\right)
$$
\n
$$
- \frac{1}{8}vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)\operatorname{tr}\left[\left[\hat{h}^{(-2)}\otimes\operatorname{vec}\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)\right]\hat{h}^{(4)'}\right],
$$

and that

$$
B_1^1 B_1^{1'} = \left[ \hat{h}^{(-2)} \frac{\hat{b}_D^{(1)}}{\hat{b}_D} - \frac{1}{2} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(3)'} vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right) \right] \left[ \hat{h}^{(-2)} \frac{\hat{b}_D^{(1)}}{\hat{b}_D} - \frac{1}{2} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(3)'} vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right) \right]'
$$
  
\n
$$
= \hat{h}^{(-2)} \frac{\hat{b}_D^{(1)}}{\hat{b}_D} \frac{\hat{b}_D^{(1)}}{\hat{b}_D} \hat{h}^{(-2)} - \frac{1}{2} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(3)'} vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right) \frac{\hat{b}_D^{(1)}}{\hat{b}_D} \hat{h}^{(-2)}\n- \frac{1}{2} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \frac{\hat{b}_D^{(1)}}{\hat{b}_D} vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)' \hat{h}^{(3)} \hat{h}^{(-2)} + \frac{1}{4} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(3)'} vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)' vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)' \hat{h}^{(3)} \hat{h}^{(-2)}.
$$

We have

$$
B_{22}^{2} - B_{4}^{1}vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right) = -\frac{1}{4}vec\left[\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\otimes vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)'\right)\hat{h}^{(4)}\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right] - \frac{1}{4}vec\left[\hat{h}^{(-2)}\hat{h}^{(4)'}\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\otimes vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)\right)\right] + \frac{1}{4}vec\left[\left(\left(vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)'\hat{h}^{(3)}\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)\otimes \hat{h}^{(-2)}\right]\hat{h}^{(3)}\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right] + \frac{1}{4}vec\left[\hat{h}^{(-2)}\hat{h}^{(3)'}\left[\left(vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)'\hat{h}^{(3)}\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)'\otimes \hat{h}^{(-2)}\right]\right] + \frac{1}{4}vec\left[\hat{h}^{(-2)}\hat{h}^{(3)'}vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)vec\left(\hat{h}^{(3)}\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)'\otimes \hat{h}^{(-2)}\right] + \frac{1}{2}vec\left[\hat{h}^{(-2)}\hat{h}^{(3)'}\left[\hat{h}^{(-2)}\otimes \hat{h}^{(-2)}\right]\hat{h}^{(3)}\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right] - \frac{1}{2}vec\left[\hat{h}^{(-2)}\hat{h}^{(3)'}vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)\frac{\hat{b}_{D}^{(1)}}{\hat{b}_{D}}\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right] - \frac{1}{2}vec\left[\hat{h}^{(-2)}\frac{\hat{b}_{D}^{(1)}}{\hat{b}_{D}}vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right)'\hat{h}^{(3)}\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right] - \frac{1}{2}vec\left[\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\frac{\hat{b}_{D}^{(1)}}{\hat{b}_{D}}\right)'\otimes \hat{h}^{(-2)}\right]\hat{h}^{(3)}\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right] - \frac{1}{2}vec\left[\hat{h}^{(-2)}\hat{
$$

We can further decompose  $B_{22}^2 - B_4^1$ v*ec*  $\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right) - \textit{vec}\left(B_1^1B_1^{1\prime}\right)$  as

$$
B_{22}^2 - B_4^1 vec\left(\hat{h}^{(-2)}\right) - vec\left(B_1^1 B_1^{1\prime}\right) = F_1 + F_2,
$$

where

<span id="page-32-0"></span>
$$
F_{1} = -\frac{1}{4} \nu e c \left[ \left( \hat{h}^{(-2)} \otimes \nu e c \left( \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right)' \right) \hat{h}^{(4)} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right] - \frac{1}{4} \nu e c \left[ \hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(4)'} \left( \hat{h}^{(-2)} \otimes \nu e c \left( \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right) \right) \right] + \frac{1}{4} \nu e c \left[ \hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(3)'} \left[ \left( \nu e c \left( \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right)' \hat{h}^{(3)} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right)' \otimes \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right] \right] + \frac{1}{4} \nu e c \left[ \left[ \left( \nu e c \left( \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right)' \hat{h}^{(3)} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right) \otimes \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right] \hat{h}^{(3)} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right] + \frac{1}{2} \nu e c \left[ \hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(3)'} \left[ \hat{h}^{(-2)} \otimes \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right] \hat{h}^{(3)} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right], \tag{76}
$$

<span id="page-33-0"></span>
$$
F_2 = -\frac{1}{2} \text{vec} \left[ \left[ \left( \hat{h}^{(-2)} \frac{\hat{b}_D^{(1)}}{\hat{b}_D} \right)' \otimes \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right] \hat{h}^{(3)} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right] - \frac{1}{2} \text{vec} \left[ \hat{h}^{(-2)} \hat{h}^{(3)\prime} \left[ \left( \hat{h}^{(-2)} \frac{\hat{b}_D^{(1)}}{\hat{b}_D} \right) \otimes \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right] \right] + \text{vec} \left( \hat{h}^{(-2)} \frac{\hat{b}_D^{(2)}}{\hat{b}_D} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right) - \text{vec} \left( \hat{h}^{(-2)} \frac{\hat{b}_D^{(1)}}{\hat{b}_D} \frac{\hat{b}_D^{(1)}}{\hat{b}_D} \hat{h}^{(-2)} \right).
$$
 (77)

## *A.3. Proof of [Theorem](#page-9-1)* [3.1](#page-9-1)

It is noted that  $h_n(\theta) = -\overline{l}_n(\theta) = -\frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n l_t(\theta)$ ,  $b_D(\theta) = p(\theta)$ ,  $\pi(\theta) = \ln p(\theta)$  and  $\overline{\mathbf{H}}_n^{(j)}(\theta) = \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n l_t^{(j)}(\theta) = \overline{l}_n^{(j)}$  $\int_{n}^{0}$  (θ) for  $j = 3, 4$ . Thus, according to [Lemma](#page-9-0)  $3.2$ , we have

$$
\overline{\theta} = \frac{\int \theta p(\theta) \exp(-nh_n(\theta)) d\theta}{\int p(\theta) \exp(-nh_n(\theta)) d\theta} = \hat{\theta} - \frac{1}{n} \overline{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1} (\hat{\theta}) \frac{\hat{p}^{(1)}}{\hat{p}} \n+ \frac{1}{2n} \overline{\mathbf{H}}_n (\hat{\theta})^{-1} \overline{\mathbf{H}}_n^{(3)} (\hat{\theta})' \text{ vec } (\overline{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1} (\hat{\theta})) + O_p (\frac{1}{n^2}),
$$
\n(78)

and

<span id="page-33-1"></span>
$$
vec\left(V\left(\overline{\theta}\right)\right) = \frac{\int vec\left[\left(\theta - \overline{\theta}\right)\left(\theta - \overline{\theta}\right)'\right]p\left(\theta\right)exp\left(-nh_n\left(\theta\right)\right)d\theta}{\int p\left(\theta\right)exp\left(-nh_n\left(\theta\right)\right)d\theta} = -\frac{1}{n}vec\left(\hat{\mathbf{H}}_n\left(\hat{\theta}\right)^{-1}\right) + \frac{1}{n^2}F_1 + \frac{1}{n^2}F_2 + O_p\left(\frac{1}{n^3}\right),
$$
(79)

where

<span id="page-33-5"></span><span id="page-33-2"></span>
$$
F_1 = -\frac{1}{4} \text{vec} \left[ \left( \tilde{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \otimes \text{vec} \left( \tilde{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right)' \right) \tilde{\mathbf{H}}_n^{(4)} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \tilde{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right] - \frac{1}{4} \text{vec} \left[ \tilde{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \tilde{\mathbf{H}}_n^{(4)} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right)' \left( \tilde{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \otimes \text{vec} \left( \tilde{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right) \right] + \frac{1}{4} \text{vec} \left[ \tilde{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \tilde{\mathbf{H}}_n^{(3)} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right)' \left[ \left( \text{vec} \left( \tilde{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right)' \tilde{\mathbf{H}}_n^{(3)} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \tilde{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right)' \otimes \tilde{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right] \right] + \frac{1}{4} \text{vec} \left[ \left[ \left( \text{vec} \left( \tilde{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right)' \tilde{\mathbf{H}}_n^{(3)} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \tilde{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right) \otimes \tilde{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right] \tilde{\mathbf{H}}_n^{(3)} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \tilde{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right] + \frac{1}{2} \text{vec} \left[
$$

From ([78](#page-33-1)), by the Taylor expansion of  $vec\left(\bar{\bm{H}}_{n}\left(\bar{\bm{\theta}}\right)\right)$  at  $\hat{\bm{\theta}}$ , we have

<span id="page-33-3"></span>
$$
vec\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}\left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right)=vec\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)+\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}-\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right]+\mathcal{O}_{p}\left(\frac{1}{n^{2}}\right).
$$
\n(82)

Hence, we get

<span id="page-33-4"></span>
$$
P_L = \mathbf{tr} \left[ -n \bar{\mathbf{H}}_n \left( \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) V \left( \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right] = -n \nu e c \left( \bar{\mathbf{H}}_n \left( \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right)' \nu e c \left( V \left( \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right)
$$
  
= 
$$
-n \nu e c \left( \bar{\mathbf{H}}_n \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right)' \nu e c \left( V \left( \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right) - n \nu e c \left( \bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{(3)} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \left( \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} - \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right)' \nu e c \left( V \left( \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right)
$$
  

$$
-n \nu e c \left( V \left( \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right) O_p \left( \frac{1}{n^2} \right)
$$
(83)

By [\(67](#page-29-0)), ([68](#page-29-1)), and [\(70](#page-29-2)), we can have

<span id="page-34-0"></span>
$$
n\vec{v} = (\vec{H}_{n}^{(3)}(\hat{\theta}) (\vec{\theta} - \hat{\theta}))' \vec{v} = (\vec{v}(\vec{\theta}))
$$
\n
$$
= \vec{v} = (\vec{H}_{n}^{(3)}(\hat{\theta}) (\vec{\theta} - \hat{\theta}))' \vec{v} = (-\vec{H}_{n}^{-1}(\hat{\theta})) + O_{p}(\frac{1}{n^{2}})
$$
\n
$$
= \frac{1}{n} \vec{v} = (\vec{H}_{n}^{(3)}(\hat{\theta}) (\vec{-H}_{n}^{-1}(\hat{\theta}) \frac{\hat{p}^{(1)}}{\hat{p}} + \frac{1}{2}\vec{H}_{n}(\hat{\theta})^{-1}\vec{H}_{n}^{(3)}(\hat{\theta})' \vec{v} = (\vec{H}_{n}^{-1}(\hat{\theta}))
$$
\n
$$
= \frac{1}{n} (\vec{H}_{n}^{-1}(\hat{\theta}) \frac{\hat{p}^{(1)}}{\hat{p}})^{'} \vec{H}_{n}^{(3)}(\hat{\theta})' \vec{v} = (\vec{H}_{n}(\hat{\theta})^{-1})
$$
\n
$$
- \frac{1}{2n} \vec{v} = (\vec{H}_{n}^{-1}(\hat{\theta}) \frac{\hat{p}^{(1)}}{\hat{p}})^{'} \vec{H}_{n}^{(3)}(\hat{\theta}) \vec{H}_{n}(\hat{\theta})^{-1} \vec{H}_{n}^{(3)}(\hat{\theta})' \vec{v} = (\vec{H}_{n}(\hat{\theta})^{-1}) + O_{p}(\frac{1}{n^{2}})
$$
\n(30)

where

$$
vec\left[\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\frac{\hat{p}^{(1)}}{\hat{p}}\right]'\nvec{v}\n\begin{pmatrix}\n\tilde{e}^{(1)}\left(\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\right) \\
\tilde{e}^{(2)}\left(\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\right)'\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\frac{\hat{p}^{(1)}}{\hat{p}}\n\end{pmatrix}
$$
\n
$$
= vec\left(\mathbf{I}_{P} \times \mathbf{I}_{P} \times \tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\right)'\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\frac{\hat{p}^{(1)}}{\hat{p}}\n\end{pmatrix}
$$
\n
$$
= vec\left(\mathbf{I}_{P}\right)'vec\left(2\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\otimes\mathbf{I}_{P}\right]\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\frac{\hat{p}^{(1)}}{\hat{p}}\n\end{pmatrix}
$$
\n
$$
= vec\left(\mathbf{I}_{P}\right)'\left[\left(\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\frac{\hat{p}^{(1)}}{\hat{p}}\right)'\otimes\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\otimes\mathbf{I}_{P}\right]vec\left(2\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right)
$$
\n
$$
= tr\left[\mathbf{I}_{P} \times \mathbf{I}_{P} \times \tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)' \times \left[\left(\tilde{\mathbf
$$

by [\(50](#page-24-4) ) and ([51](#page-24-2) ). For the same reason

$$
vec\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right)^{\prime}\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{\prime}vec\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\right) =\mathbf{tr}\left[\left[\left(\text{vec}\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right)^{\prime}\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right)\otimes\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right]\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right].
$$
\n(86)

Then from [\(84\)](#page-34-0)–([86](#page-34-1) ), we have

<span id="page-34-1"></span>
$$
n\vec{v} = \vec{r} \mathbf{r} \left[ \vec{H}_n^{(3)} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \left( \overline{\boldsymbol{\theta}} - \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right]' \vec{v} = \vec{c} \left( V \left( \overline{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right)
$$
\n
$$
= \frac{1}{n} \mathbf{tr} \left[ \vec{H}_n^{(3)} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right)' \left[ \left( \overline{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \frac{\hat{\boldsymbol{\rho}}^{(1)}}{\hat{\boldsymbol{\rho}}} \right) \otimes \overline{\mathbf{H}}_n \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right)^{-1} \right] \right]
$$
\n
$$
- \frac{1}{2n} \mathbf{tr} \left[ \left[ \left( \vec{v} e \vec{c} \left( \overline{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right)' \overline{\mathbf{H}}_n^{(3)} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \overline{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right) \otimes \overline{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right] \overline{\mathbf{H}}_n^{(3)} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right] + O_p(\frac{1}{n^2}).
$$
\n(87)

And note that

$$
n\vec{v}c\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right)'\vec{v}ec\left(V\left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right)
$$
\n
$$
= \vec{v}ec\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right)' \left[-\vec{v}ec\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right) + \frac{1}{n}F_{1} + \frac{1}{n}F_{2}\right] + O_{p}\left(\frac{1}{n^{2}}\right)
$$
\n
$$
= -P + \frac{1}{n}\vec{v}ec\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right)'F_{1} + \frac{1}{n}\vec{v}ec\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right)'F_{2} + O_{p}\left(\frac{1}{n^{2}}\right).
$$
\n(88)

Furthermore, from ([80](#page-33-2) ) and [\(81](#page-33-3) ), we have

$$
vec(\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}))'F_{1}
$$
\n
$$
= -\frac{1}{2}\mathbf{tr}\left[\left(\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})\otimes vec\left(\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})\right)'\right)\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(4)}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})\right]
$$
\n
$$
+\frac{1}{2}\mathbf{tr}\left[\left[\left(vec\{p}_{n}^{-1}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})\otimes vec\left(\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})\right)'\right)\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})\right]\otimes \tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})\right]\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})\right]
$$
\n
$$
+\frac{1}{2}\mathbf{tr}\left[\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})'\left[\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})\otimes \tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})\right]\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})\right]
$$
\n
$$
vec(\tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}))'F_{2}
$$
\n(89)

<span id="page-35-1"></span><span id="page-35-0"></span>
$$
= -\mathbf{tr} \left[ \bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right)' \left[ \left( \bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \frac{\hat{p}^{(1)}}{\hat{p}} \right) \otimes \bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right] \right] + \mathbf{tr} \left[ \bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \frac{\hat{p}^{(2)}}{\hat{p}} \right] - \mathbf{tr} \left[ \bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \frac{\hat{p}^{(1)}}{\hat{p}} \frac{\hat{p}^{(1)}}{\hat{p}}' \right] \right]
$$
\n(90)

Hence, from ([89](#page-35-0) ) and [\(90](#page-35-1) ), we have

<span id="page-35-2"></span>
$$
n\vec{v} = (\vec{H}_{n}(\hat{\theta}))' \vec{v} = (\vec{V}(\bar{\theta}))
$$
\n
$$
= -P - \frac{1}{2n}\mathbf{tr}\left[\left(\vec{H}_{n}^{-1}(\hat{\theta}) \otimes \vec{v} = (\vec{H}_{n}^{-1}(\hat{\theta}))'\right)\vec{H}_{n}^{(4)}(\hat{\theta})\right]
$$
\n
$$
+ \frac{1}{2n}\mathbf{tr}\left[\left[\left(\vec{v} = (\vec{H}_{n}^{-1}(\hat{\theta}))' \vec{H}_{n}^{(3)}(\hat{\theta}) \vec{H}_{n}^{-1}(\hat{\theta})\right) \otimes \vec{H}_{n}^{-1}(\hat{\theta})\right] \vec{H}_{n}^{(3)}(\hat{\theta})\right]
$$
\n
$$
+ \frac{1}{2n}\mathbf{tr}\left[\vec{H}_{n}^{(3)}(\hat{\theta})' \left[\vec{H}_{n}^{-1}(\hat{\theta}) \otimes \vec{H}_{n}^{-1}(\hat{\theta})\right] \vec{H}_{n}^{(3)}(\hat{\theta}) \vec{H}_{n}^{-1}(\hat{\theta})\right]
$$
\n
$$
- \mathbf{tr}\left[\vec{H}_{n}^{(3)}(\hat{\theta})' \left[\left(\vec{H}_{n}^{-1}(\hat{\theta}) \frac{\hat{p}^{(1)}}{\hat{p}}\right) \otimes \vec{H}_{n}^{-1}(\hat{\theta})\right]\right]
$$
\n
$$
+ \mathbf{tr}\left[\vec{H}_{n}^{-1}(\hat{\theta}) \frac{\hat{p}^{(2)}}{\hat{p}}\right] - \mathbf{tr}\left[\vec{H}_{n}^{-1}(\hat{\theta}) \frac{\hat{p}^{(1)}}{\hat{p}} \frac{\hat{p}^{(1)}}{\hat{p}}\right].
$$
\nThen, from (83) and (91), we have

$$
P_L = P + \frac{1}{n}C_1 + \frac{1}{n}C_2 + O_p\left(\frac{1}{n^2}\right),
$$

where

$$
C_1 = \frac{1}{2} \mathbf{tr} \left[ \left( \bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \otimes \text{vec} \left( \bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right)' \right) \bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{(4)} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right] - \frac{1}{2} \mathbf{tr} \left[ \bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{(3)} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right)' \left[ \bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \otimes \bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right] \bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{(3)} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right] C_2 = -\mathbf{tr} \left[ \bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \frac{\hat{p}^{(2)}}{\hat{p}} \right] + \mathbf{tr} \left[ \bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \frac{\hat{p}^{(1)}}{\hat{p}} \frac{\hat{p}^{(1)}}{\hat{p}}' \right] = -\mathbf{tr} \left[ \bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \pi^{(2)} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right].
$$

*n*2

We can rewrite *C* <sup>1</sup> and *C*<sup>2</sup> as

$$
C_1 = \frac{1}{2}C_{11} - \frac{1}{2}C_{12}, C_2 = -C_{22},
$$

where

$$
C_{11} = \text{tr}\left[\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1} \otimes vec\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right)'\right) \bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(4)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right],
$$
  
\n
$$
C_{12} = \text{tr}\left[\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)'\left[\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) \otimes \bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right] \bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) \bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right]
$$
  
\n
$$
= vec\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\right)'\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) \bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) \bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)' vec\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\right),
$$

$$
C_{22} = \mathbf{tr} \left[ \bar{\mathbf{H}}_n \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right)^{-1} \pi^{(2)} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right], C_{23} = \pi^{(1)} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right)' \bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \pi^{(1)} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right).
$$

And from [Li et al.](#page-43-5) ([2017\)](#page-43-5)

$$
\ln p\left(\mathbf{y}|\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) = \ln p\left(\mathbf{y}|\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) - \frac{1}{2n}C_{21} + \frac{1}{2n}C_{23} + \frac{1}{8n}C_{12} + O_p\left(n^{-2}\right)
$$
\n(92)

where

$$
C_{21} = \mathbf{tr} \left[ \bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right)^{\prime} \left[ \left( \bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \pi^{(1)} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right) \otimes \bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right] \right] = \pi^{(1)} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right)^{\prime} \bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right)^{\prime} vec \left( \bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right)^{-1} \right).
$$

Hence

$$
DIC_{L} = -2 \ln p \left( \mathbf{y} | \overline{\theta} \right) + 2P_{L}
$$
  
= -2 \ln p \left( \mathbf{y} | \hat{\theta} \right) + \frac{1}{n} C\_{21} - \frac{1}{n} C\_{23} - \frac{1}{4n} C\_{12} + 2P + \frac{2}{n} C\_{1} + \frac{2}{n} C\_{2} + O\_{p} \left( \frac{1}{n^{2}} \right)   
= AIC + \frac{1}{n} D\_{1} + \frac{1}{n} D\_{2} + O\_{p} \left( \frac{1}{n^{2}} \right),

where

$$
D_1 = C_{11} + \frac{5}{4}C_{12},
$$
  
\n
$$
D_2 = C_{21} - 2C_{22} - C_{23}.
$$

*A.4. Proof of [Theorem](#page-15-5)* [4.1](#page-15-5)

By the second-order Taylor expansion of  $\bm{s}_t$   $(\bar{\bm{\theta}})$  at  $\hat{\bm{\theta}}$ ,  $\bar{\bm{\Omega}}_n$   $(\bar{\bm{\theta}})$  can be written as

$$
\begin{split}\n\bar{\Omega}_{n}(\bar{\theta}) &= \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^{n} \sum_{\tau=1}^{n} \left[ \mathbf{s}_{t}(\hat{\theta}) + l_{t}^{(2)}(\hat{\theta})(\tilde{\theta} - \hat{\theta}) + \left( l_{p} \otimes (\tilde{\theta} - \hat{\theta})' \right) l_{t}^{(3)}(\tilde{\theta}_{t})(\tilde{\theta} - \hat{\theta}) \right] \\
&\times \left[ \mathbf{s}_{\tau}(\hat{\theta}) + l_{\tau}^{(2)}(\hat{\theta})(\tilde{\theta} - \hat{\theta}) + \left( l_{p} \otimes (\tilde{\theta} - \hat{\theta})' \right) l_{\tau}^{(3)}(\tilde{\theta}_{\tau})(\tilde{\theta} - \hat{\theta}) \right] \hat{\mathbf{k}}(\frac{t-\tau}{\gamma_{n}}) \\
&= \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^{n} \sum_{\tau=1}^{n} \mathbf{s}_{t}(\hat{\theta}) \mathbf{s}_{\tau}(\hat{\theta}) \hat{\mathbf{k}}(\frac{t-\tau}{\gamma_{n}}) + \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^{n} \sum_{\tau=1}^{n} \mathbf{s}_{t}(\hat{\theta})(\tilde{\theta} - \hat{\theta})' l_{\tau}^{(2)}(\hat{\theta})' \hat{\mathbf{k}}(\frac{t-\tau}{\gamma_{n}}) \\
&+ \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^{n} \sum_{\tau=1}^{n} l_{t}^{(2)}(\hat{\theta})(\tilde{\theta} - \hat{\theta}) \mathbf{s}_{\tau}(\hat{\theta})' \hat{\mathbf{k}}(\frac{t-\tau}{\gamma_{n}}) \\
&+ \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^{n} \sum_{\tau=1}^{n} \mathbf{s}_{t}(\hat{\theta})(\tilde{\theta} - \hat{\theta})' \hat{\mathbf{k}}(\hat{\theta})' (\hat{\theta} - \hat{\theta})' \hat{\mathbf{k}}(\frac{t-\tau}{\gamma_{n}}) \\
&+ \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^{n} \sum_{\tau=1}^{n} \mathbf{s}_{t}(\hat{\theta})(\tilde{\theta} - \hat{\theta})' \hat{\mathbf{k}}(\hat{\theta}_{\tau})' (\hat{\theta} - \hat{\theta})) \hat{\mathbf{k}}(\frac{t-\tau}{\gamma_{n}}) \\
&+ \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^{n} \sum_{\tau=1
$$

where both  $\tilde{\theta}_t$  and  $\tilde{\theta}_\tau$  lie between  $\bar{\theta}$  and  $\hat{\theta}$  for all t and  $\tau$ . We consider the stochastic order of each term. For simplicity, we first consider the terms with order greater than or equal to  $O_p\left(\gamma_n/n^2\right)$  which are the fourth to ninth terms. Without loss of generality, we will analyze the fifth and sixth terms only.

For the fifth term, we can rewrite it as

<span id="page-37-0"></span>
$$
\frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=1}^{n}\sum_{\tau=1}^{n}\mathbf{s}_{t}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}-\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{'}l_{\tau}^{(3)}\left(\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{\tau}\right)^{'}\left(l_{p}\otimes\left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}-\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right)k\left(\frac{t-\tau}{\gamma_{n}}\right) \n= \left[\frac{1}{n^{2}}\sum_{t=1}^{n}\frac{1}{n}\sum_{\tau=1}^{n}\mathbf{s}_{t}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)n\left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}-\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{'}l_{\tau}^{(3)}\left(\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{\tau}\right)^{'}k\left(\frac{t-\tau}{\gamma_{n}}\right)\right]\left(l_{p}\otimes n\left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}-\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right) \n= \left[\begin{array}{c} \frac{1}{n^{2}}\sum_{j=0}^{n-1}k\left(\frac{j}{\gamma_{n}}\right)\frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=j+1}^{n}\mathbf{s}_{t}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)n\left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}-\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{'}l_{\tau-j}^{(3)}\left(\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{t-j}\right)^{'}\\ +\frac{1}{n^{2}}\sum_{j=-n+1}^{-1}k\left(\frac{j}{\gamma_{n}}\right)\frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=-j+1}^{n}\mathbf{s}_{t+j}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)n\left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}-\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{'}l_{\tau}^{(3)}\left(\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{t}\right)^{'}\right] \times\left(l_{p}\otimes n\left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}-\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right).
$$
\n(93)

We have  $I_p\otimes n\left(\bar{\pmb{\theta}}-\hat{\pmb{\theta}}\right)=O_p$  (1) by [Lemma](#page-9-0) [3.2](#page-9-0) , then we need to consider the order of the first term in ([93](#page-37-0)), that is

<span id="page-37-2"></span>
$$
\begin{split} &vec\left[\frac{1}{n^{2}}\sum_{t=1}^{n}\frac{1}{n}\sum_{\tau=1}^{n}\mathbf{s}_{t}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)n\left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}-\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)'l_{\tau}^{(3)}\left(\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{\tau}\right)'k\left(\frac{t-\tau}{\gamma_{n}}\right)\right] \\ & =\begin{bmatrix} \frac{1}{n^{2}}\sum_{j=0}^{n-1}k\left(\frac{j}{\gamma_{n}}\right)\frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=j+1}^{n}\left[l_{t-j}^{(3)}\left(\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{t-j}\right)\otimes\mathbf{s}_{t}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right] \\ +\frac{1}{n^{2}}\sum_{j=-n+1}^{n}k\left(\frac{j}{\gamma_{n}}\right)\frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=-j+1}^{n}\left[l_{t}^{(3)}\left(\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{t}\right)\otimes\mathbf{s}_{t+j}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right] \end{bmatrix} \times vec\left(n\left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}-\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right). \end{split} \tag{94}
$$

By the Minkowski inequality

<span id="page-37-1"></span>
$$
\begin{split}\n&\left\|\n\begin{array}{c}\n\frac{1}{n^{2}}\sum_{j=0}^{n-1}k\left(\frac{j}{n}\right)\frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=j+1}^{n}\left[l_{t-j}^{(3)}\left(\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{t-j}\right)\otimes\mathbf{s}_{t}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right] \\
+\frac{1}{n^{2}}\sum_{j=-n+1}^{-1}k\left(\frac{j}{n}\right)\frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=-j+1}^{n}\left[l_{t}^{(3)}\left(\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{t}\right)\otimes\mathbf{s}_{t+j}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right]\n\end{array}\right\| \\
&\leq \frac{1}{n^{2}}\sum_{j=0}^{n-1}\left|k\left(\frac{j}{n}\right)\right|\frac{1}{n}\left\|\sum_{t=j+1}^{n}l_{t-j}^{(3)}\left(\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{t-j}\right)\otimes\mathbf{s}_{t}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right\| + \\
&\frac{1}{n^{2}}\sum_{j=-n+1}^{-1}\left|k\left(\frac{j}{n}\right)\right|\frac{1}{n}\left\|\sum_{t=-j+1}^{n}l_{t}^{(3)}\left(\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{t}\right)\otimes\mathbf{s}_{t+j}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right\|.\n\end{split} \tag{95}
$$

Following [Gallant and White](#page-43-19) [\(1988](#page-43-19)), we consider each element of  $l_{t-j}^{(3)}\left(\tilde{\bm{\theta}}_{t-j}\right)\otimes{\bf s}_t\left(\hat{\bm{\theta}}\right)$  which can be expressed as the product of  $(uv)$ th element of  $l_{t-j}^{(3)}\left(\tilde{\pmb{\theta}}_{t-j}\right)$  and  $w$ th element of  $\mathbf{s}_t\left(\hat{\pmb{\theta}}\right)$  for. It is denoted by  $l_{t-j,uv}^{(3)}\left(\tilde{\pmb{\theta}}_{t-j}\right)$   $\mathbf{s}_{t,w}\left(\hat{\pmb{\theta}}\right)$  for each  $j \geq 0$ . Then we have

$$
\left\| \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=j+1}^{n} l_{t-j,uv}^{(3)} \left( \tilde{\theta}_{t} \right) \mathbf{s}_{t,w} \left( \hat{\theta} \right) \right\| \leq \left( \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=j+1}^{n} \left\| l_{t-j,uv}^{(3)} \left( \tilde{\theta}_{t} \right) \right\|^{2} \right)^{1/2} \left( \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=j+1}^{n} \left\| \mathbf{s}_{t,w} \left( \hat{\theta} \right) \right\|^{2} \right)^{1/2}
$$

$$
\leq \left( \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=j+1}^{n} M_{t}^{2} \right)^{1/2} \left( \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=j+1}^{n} M_{t}^{2} \right)^{1/2} \leq \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^{n} M_{t}^{2},
$$

for each  $j$  and each element of  $\frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=j+1}^n l_{t-j}^{(3)}\left(\tilde{\pmb\theta}_t\right)$   $\pmb s_t\left(\hat{\pmb\theta}\right)$ . The first inequality follows the Cauchy–Schwarz inequality and the second inequality is due to [Assumption](#page-7-6) [5.](#page-7-6) Then

$$
\left\|\frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=j+1}^n l_{t-j}^{(3)}\left(\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{t-j}\right)\otimes \mathbf{s}_t\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right\|^2 \leq P^3\left(\frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=1}^n M_t^2\right)^2,
$$

for each  $j\geq 0$  since there are  $P^3$  elements in  $\frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=j+1}^n l_t^{(3)}\left(\tilde{\pmb{\theta}}_t\right)\mathbf{s}_{t-j}\left(\hat{\pmb{\theta}}\right)$ . And also by [Assumption](#page-7-6) [5,](#page-7-6)  $\sup_t E\left(M_t^2\right)\leq M^2<\infty$ . Similar to [Andrews](#page-42-2) ([1991](#page-42-2)), by Markov's inequality,  $\frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=1}^{n}M_t^2=O_p(1)$ , we have  $\parallel$  $\frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=j+1}^{n}l_{t}^{(3)}\left(\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{t}\right)\mathbf{s}_{t-j}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right| = O_{p}(1)$  for each  $j \geq 0$ . Hence, we have

$$
\sup_{0 \le j \le n-1} \left\| \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=j+1}^{n} l_{t-j}^{(3)} \left( \tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{t-j} \right) \otimes \mathbf{s}_t \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right\| = O_p(1), \tag{96}
$$

and

<span id="page-38-2"></span><span id="page-38-0"></span>
$$
\sup_{-n+1 \leq j \leq -1} \left\| \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=-j+1}^{n} l_t^{(3)} \left( \tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_t \right) \otimes \mathbf{s}_{t+j} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right\| = O_p(1).
$$
\n(97)

By [\(95\)](#page-37-1)–([97](#page-38-0)), we have

$$
\frac{n^{2}}{\gamma_{n}} \left\| \frac{1}{n^{2}} \sum_{j=0}^{n-1} k\left(\frac{j}{\gamma_{n}}\right) \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=j+1}^{n} \left[ l_{t-j}^{(3)}\left(\tilde{\theta}_{t-j}\right) \otimes \mathbf{s}_{t}\left(\hat{\theta}\right) \right] \right\|
$$
\n
$$
\leq \frac{1}{\gamma_{n}} \sum_{j=-n+1}^{n-1} \left| k\left(\frac{j}{\gamma_{n}}\right) \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=-j+1}^{n} \left[ l_{t}^{(3)}\left(\theta\right) \otimes \mathbf{s}_{t+j}\left(\theta\right) \right] \right\|
$$
\n
$$
\leq \frac{1}{\gamma_{n}} \sum_{j=-n+1}^{n-1} \left| k\left(\frac{j}{\gamma_{n}}\right) \right|
$$
\n
$$
\times \max \left\{ \sup_{0 \leq j \leq n-1} \left| \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=j+1}^{n} l_{t}^{(3)}\left(\theta\right) \otimes \mathbf{s}_{t+j}\left(\theta\right) \right|, \sup_{-n+1 \leq j \leq -1} \left| \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=-j+1}^{n} l_{t}^{(3)}\left(\theta\right) \otimes \mathbf{s}_{t+j}\left(\theta\right) \right| \right\}
$$
\n
$$
= O_{p}(1), \tag{98}
$$

by the Minkowski inequality and [Assumption](#page-14-3) [11.](#page-14-3) Then from ([93](#page-37-0)), [\(94\)](#page-37-2) and ([98](#page-38-1)), we get

<span id="page-38-6"></span><span id="page-38-1"></span>
$$
\frac{n^2}{\gamma_n} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n \sum_{\tau=1}^n \mathbf{s}_t \left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) \left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} - \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)' l_{\tau}^{(3)} \left(\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{\tau}\right)' \left(l_p \otimes \left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} - \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right) k \left(\frac{t-\tau}{\gamma_n}\right) = O_p\left(1\right).
$$
\n(99)

Similarly, for the sixth term, we have

<span id="page-38-4"></span>
$$
\frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=1}^{n}\sum_{\tau=1}^{n}l_{t}^{(2)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}-\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}-\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{\prime}l_{t}^{(3)}\left(\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{\tau}\right)^{\prime}\left(l_{p}\otimes\left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}-\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right)k\left(\frac{t-\tau}{\gamma_{n}}\right)=CC_{1}\times n\left(l_{p}\otimes\left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}-\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right),\tag{100}
$$

where

$$
CC_1 = \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n \frac{1}{n} \sum_{\tau=1}^n l_t^{(2)} (\hat{\theta}) (\bar{\theta} - \hat{\theta}) (\bar{\theta} - \hat{\theta})' l_t^{(3)} (\tilde{\theta}_{\tau})' k (\frac{t - \tau}{\gamma_n})
$$
  
= 
$$
\frac{1}{n} \sum_{j=-0}^{n-1} k (\frac{j}{\gamma_n}) \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=j+1}^n l_t^{(2)} (\hat{\theta}) (\bar{\theta} - \hat{\theta}) (\bar{\theta} - \hat{\theta})' l_{t-j}^{(3)} (\tilde{\theta}_{t-j})'
$$
  
+ 
$$
\frac{1}{n} \sum_{j=-n+1}^{-1} k (\frac{j}{\gamma_n}) \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=-j+1}^n l_{t+j}^{(2)} (\hat{\theta}) (\bar{\theta} - \hat{\theta}) (\bar{\theta} - \hat{\theta})' l_t^{(3)} (\tilde{\theta}_{t})',
$$

and  $n\left(I_p\otimes\left(\bar{\pmb{\theta}}-\hat{\pmb{\theta}}\right)\right)=O_p$  (1). Taking vectorization of CC<sub>1</sub>, we have

<span id="page-38-5"></span>
$$
vec(CC_1) = CC_2 \times vec\left[n^2\left(\bar{\theta} - \hat{\theta}\right)\left(\bar{\theta} - \hat{\theta}\right)'\right],
$$
\n(101)

where

<span id="page-38-3"></span>
$$
CC_2 = \frac{1}{n} \sum_{j=-0}^{n-1} k\left(\frac{j}{\gamma_n}\right) \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=j+1}^n \left[l_{t-j}^{(3)}\left(\tilde{\theta}_{t-j}\right) \otimes l_t^{(2)}\left(\hat{\theta}\right)\right] + \frac{1}{n} \sum_{j=-n+1}^{-1} k\left(\frac{j}{\gamma_n}\right) \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=-j+1}^n \left[l_t^{(3)}\left(\tilde{\theta}_t\right) \otimes l_{t+j}^{(2)}\left(\hat{\theta}\right)\right],
$$
\n(102)

and  $vec\left[n^2\left(\bar{\pmb{\theta}}-\hat{\pmb{\theta}}\right)\left(\bar{\pmb{\theta}}-\hat{\pmb{\theta}}\right)'\right]=O_p$  (1) by [Lemma](#page-9-0) [3.2](#page-9-0). Similar to the proof of [\(96\)](#page-38-2) and ([97](#page-38-0)), we have

$$
\sup_{0 \leq j \leq n-1} \left\| \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=j+1}^{n} l_{t-j}^{(3)} \left( \tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{t-j} \right) \otimes l_{t}^{(2)} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right\| = O_p(1), \tag{103}
$$

and

<span id="page-39-0"></span>33

$$
\sup_{-n+1 \leq j \leq -1} \left\| \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=-j+1}^{n} l_t^{(3)} \left( \tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_t \right) \otimes l_{t+j}^{(2)} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right\| = O_p(1), \tag{104}
$$

by [Assumption](#page-7-6) [5](#page-7-6). Hence, by ([102](#page-38-3))-[\(104\)](#page-39-0), we have

$$
\frac{n^3}{\gamma_n} \|Cc_2\|
$$
\n
$$
\leq \frac{1}{\gamma_n} \sum_{j=-n+1}^{n-1} \left| k \left( \frac{j}{\gamma_n} \right) \right|
$$
\n
$$
\times \max \left\{ \sup_{0 \leq j \leq n-1} \left\| \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=j+1}^n l_{t-j}^{(3)} \left( \tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_{t-j} \right) \otimes l_t^{(2)} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right\|, \sup_{-n+1 \leq j \leq -1} \left\| \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=-j+1}^n l_t^{(3)} \left( \tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_t \right) \otimes l_{t+j}^{(2)} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right\| \right\}
$$
\n
$$
= O_p(1). \tag{105}
$$

Hence by ([100](#page-38-4)), ([101](#page-38-5)) and [\(105\)](#page-39-1), we can get

<span id="page-39-3"></span><span id="page-39-1"></span>
$$
\frac{n^3}{\gamma_n} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n \sum_{\tau=1}^n l_t^{(2)} \left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) \left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} - \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) \left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} - \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)' l_t^{(3)} \left(\tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_t\right)' \left(l_p \otimes \left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} - \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right) k \left(\frac{t-\tau}{\gamma_n}\right) = O_p\left(1\right).
$$
\n(106)

In the same way, we can obtain the order for the fourth, seventh to ninth terms as

$$
\frac{n^2}{\gamma_n} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n \sum_{\tau=1}^n l_t^{(2)} \left(\hat{\theta}\right) \left(\bar{\theta} - \hat{\theta}\right) \left(\bar{\theta} - \hat{\theta}\right)' l_{\tau}^{(2)} \left(\hat{\theta}\right)' k \left(\frac{t-\tau}{\gamma_n}\right) = O_p\left(1\right),\tag{107}
$$

<span id="page-39-5"></span><span id="page-39-4"></span><span id="page-39-2"></span>
$$
\frac{n^2}{\gamma_n} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n \sum_{\tau=1}^n \left( I_p \otimes \left( \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} - \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right)' \right) l_t^{(3)} \left( \tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_t \right) \left( \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} - \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \mathbf{s}_{\tau} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right)' k \left( \frac{t - \tau}{\gamma_n} \right) = O_p(1), \tag{108}
$$

$$
\frac{n^3}{\gamma_n} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n \sum_{\tau=1}^n \left( I_p \otimes \left( \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} - \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right)' \right) l_t^{(3)} \left( \tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_t \right) \left( \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} - \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right)' \left( \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} - \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right)' l_{\tau}^{(2)} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right)' k \left( \frac{t - \tau}{\gamma_n} \right) = O_p(1), \tag{109}
$$

<span id="page-39-6"></span>
$$
\frac{n^4}{\gamma_n} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n \sum_{\tau=1}^n \left( I_p \otimes \left( \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} - \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right)' \right) l_t^{(3)} \left( \tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_t \right) \left( \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} - \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right)' \left( \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} - \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right)' l_t^{(3)} \left( \tilde{\boldsymbol{\theta}}_t \right)' \left( I_p \otimes \left( \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} - \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right) k \left( \frac{t-\tau}{\gamma_n} \right) = O_p(1). \tag{110}
$$

From ([107](#page-39-2)), ([99\)](#page-38-6), [\(106\)](#page-39-3), ([108\)](#page-39-4), ([109](#page-39-5)) and [\(110](#page-39-6)), we have

<span id="page-39-7"></span>
$$
\bar{\Omega}_n\left(\tilde{\theta}\right) = \bar{\Omega}_n\left(\hat{\theta}\right) + \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n \sum_{\tau=1}^n \mathbf{s}_t\left(\hat{\theta}\right) \left(\bar{\theta} - \hat{\theta}\right)' l_{\tau}^{(2)}\left(\hat{\theta}\right)' k\left(\frac{t-\tau}{\gamma_n}\right) \n+ \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=1}^n \sum_{\tau=1}^n l_t^{(2)}\left(\hat{\theta}\right) \left(\bar{\theta} - \hat{\theta}\right) \mathbf{s}_\tau\left(\hat{\theta}\right)' k\left(\frac{t-\tau}{\gamma_n}\right) + O_p\left(\frac{\gamma_n}{n^2}\right).
$$
\n(111)

In  $(111)$ , the second term can be written as

<span id="page-39-8"></span>
$$
\frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=1}^{n}\sum_{\tau=1}^{n}\mathbf{s}_{t}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}-\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{\prime}l_{\tau}^{(2)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{\prime}k\left(\frac{t-\tau}{\gamma_{n}}\right)=\frac{\gamma_{n}}{n}W_{1}
$$
\n(112)

where

$$
W_1 = \frac{1}{\gamma_n} \sum_{t=1}^n \sum_{\tau=1}^n \mathbf{s}_t \left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) \left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} - \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)' l_{\tau}^{(2)} \left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)' k \left(\frac{t-\tau}{\gamma_n}\right). \tag{113}
$$

We have

$$
W_1 = \frac{1}{\gamma_n} \sum_{j=0}^{n-1} k\left(\frac{j}{\gamma_n}\right) \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=j+1}^n \mathbf{s}_t\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) n\left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} - \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)' l_{t-j}^{(2)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)'
$$
  
+ 
$$
\frac{1}{\gamma_n} \sum_{j=-n+1}^{-1} k\left(\frac{j}{\gamma_n}\right) \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=-j+1}^n \mathbf{s}_{t+j}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) n\left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} - \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)' l_t^{(2)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)'.
$$

Vectorization of  $W_1$  is

$$
vec(W_1) = W_{11} n \left(\bar{\theta} - \hat{\theta}\right),
$$

where  $n\left(\bar{\pmb{\theta}}-\hat{\pmb{\theta}}\right)=O_p\left(1\right)$  by [Lemma](#page-9-0) [3.2](#page-9-0) and

$$
W_{11} = \frac{1}{\gamma_n} \sum_{j=0}^{n-1} k\left(\frac{j}{\gamma_n}\right) \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=j+1}^n \left[l_{t-j}^{(2)}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}) \otimes \mathbf{s}_t(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})\right] + \frac{1}{\gamma_n} \sum_{j=-n+1}^{-1} k\left(\frac{j}{\gamma_n}\right) \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=-j+1}^n \left[l_t^{(2)}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}) \otimes \mathbf{s}_{t+j}(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}})\right].
$$

Similar to  $(96)$  $(96)$  and  $(97)$  $(97)$ , we can prove that

$$
\sup_{0 \leq j \leq n-1} \left\| \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=j+1}^{n} l_{t-j}^{(2)} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \otimes \mathbf{s}_t \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right\| = O_p(1), \tag{114}
$$

and

<span id="page-40-1"></span><span id="page-40-0"></span>
$$
\sup_{-n+1 \leq j \leq -1} \left\| \frac{1}{n} \sum_{t=-j+1}^{n} l_t^{(2)} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \otimes \mathbf{s}_{t+j} \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right\| = O_p(1), \tag{115}
$$

by [Assumption](#page-14-3) [5](#page-7-6). Hence, by ([114](#page-40-0)) and [\(115](#page-40-1)) and Assumption [11](#page-14-3), we can get  $W_{11} = O_p(1)$  and  $W_1 = O_p(1)$ .

Similarly, the third term of  $(111)$  can be written as

<span id="page-40-2"></span>
$$
\frac{1}{n}\sum_{t=1}^{n}\sum_{\tau=1}^{n}l_{t}^{(2)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}-\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\mathbf{s}_{\tau}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{\prime}k\left(\frac{t-\tau}{\gamma_{n}}\right)=\frac{\gamma_{n}}{n}W_{2},\tag{116}
$$

where

$$
W_2 = \frac{1}{\gamma_n} \sum_{t=1}^n \sum_{\tau=1}^n l_t^{(2)} \left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) \left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} - \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) \mathbf{s}_{\tau} \left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)' k \left(\frac{t-\tau}{\gamma_n}\right), \tag{117}
$$

and  $W_2 = O_p(1)$ . By [\(112\)](#page-39-8) and [\(116\)](#page-40-2), we can rewrite ([111](#page-39-7)) as

$$
\bar{\Omega}_n\left(\bar{\theta}\right) = \bar{\Omega}_n\left(\hat{\theta}\right) + \frac{\gamma_n}{n}\left(W_1 + W_2\right) + O_p\left(\frac{\gamma_n}{n^2}\right),\tag{118}
$$

which proves ([32](#page-15-7)) in [Theorem](#page-15-5) [4.1.](#page-15-5)

For  $\overline{v}$ ec  $(\bar{\boldsymbol{\varOmega}_{n}}\left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right))$  we have

$$
vec\left(\bar{\Omega}_n\left(\bar{\theta}\right)\right)=vec\left(\bar{\Omega}_n\left(\hat{\theta}\right)\right)+\frac{\gamma_n}{n}\tilde{U}_1n\left(\bar{\theta}-\hat{\theta}\right)+O_p\left(\frac{\gamma_n}{n^2}\right),
$$

where

$$
\tilde{U}_1 = \frac{1}{n\gamma_n} \sum_{t=1}^n \sum_{\tau=1}^n \left[ l_{\tau}^{(2)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) \otimes \mathbf{s}_t\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) + \mathbf{s}_{\tau}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) \otimes l_{t}^{(2)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) \right] k \left(\frac{t-\tau}{\gamma_n}\right).
$$

Hence, we can get

<span id="page-40-3"></span>
$$
P_M = \mathbf{tr} \left[ n \bar{\Omega}_n \left( \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) V \left( \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right] = n \nu e c \left( \bar{\Omega}_n \left( \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right)' \nu e c \left( V \left( \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right)
$$
  
=  $n \nu e c \left( \bar{\Omega}_n \left( \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right)' \nu e c \left( V \left( \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right) + \left[ \frac{\gamma_n}{n} \tilde{U}_1 n \left( \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} - \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right]' \nu e c \left( n V \left( \bar{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \right) \right) + O_p \left( \frac{\gamma_n}{n^2} \right).$  (119)

We can write the second term of  $(119)$  as

$$
\begin{split}\n&\left[\frac{\gamma_{n}}{n}\tilde{U}_{1}n\left(\bar{\theta}-\hat{\theta}\right)\right]'\text{vec}\left(nV\left(\bar{\theta}\right)\right) \\
&=\left[\frac{\gamma_{n}}{n}\tilde{U}_{1}n\left(\bar{\theta}-\hat{\theta}\right)\right]'\left[\text{vec}\left(-\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\theta}\right)\right)+O_{p}\left(\frac{1}{n}\right)\right] \\
&=\left[\frac{\gamma_{n}}{n}\tilde{U}_{1}\left(-\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\theta}\right)\frac{\hat{p}^{(1)}}{\hat{p}}+\frac{1}{2}\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\theta}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}\left(\hat{\theta}\right)'\text{vec}\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\theta}\right)\right)+O_{p}\left(\frac{1}{n}\right)\right)\right] \\
&\times\text{vec}\left(-\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\theta}\right)\right)+O_{p}\left(\frac{\gamma_{n}}{n^{2}}\right) \\
&=\frac{\gamma_{n}}{n}\text{vec}\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\theta}\right)\right)'\tilde{U}_{1}\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\theta}\right)\frac{\hat{p}^{(1)}}{\hat{p}} \\
&-\frac{1}{2}\frac{\gamma_{n}}{n}\text{vec}\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\theta}\right)\right)'\tilde{U}_{1}\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\theta}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}\left(\hat{\theta}\right)'\text{vec}\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\theta}\right)\right)+O_{p}\left(\frac{\gamma_{n}}{n^{2}}\right),\n\end{split} \tag{120}
$$

by  $(78)$ . And the first term of  $(119)$  $(119)$  can be written as

<span id="page-41-2"></span><span id="page-41-0"></span>
$$
n\text{vec}\left(\bar{\Omega}_{n}\left(\hat{\theta}\right)\right)^{\prime}\text{vec}\left(V\left(\overline{\theta}\right)\right) \qquad (121)
$$
\n
$$
= \text{vec}\left(\bar{\Omega}_{n}\left(\hat{\theta}\right)\right)^{\prime}\text{nvec}\left(V\left(\overline{\theta}\right)\right) \qquad (121)
$$
\n
$$
= \text{vec}\left(\bar{\Omega}_{n}\left(\hat{\theta}\right)\right)^{\prime}\left[-\text{vec}\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\theta}\right)\right) + \frac{1}{n}F_{1} + \frac{1}{n}F_{2}\right] + O_{p}\left(\frac{1}{n^{2}}\right)
$$
\n
$$
= -\text{tr}\left[\bar{\Omega}_{n}\left(\hat{\theta}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\theta}\right)\right] + \frac{1}{n}\text{vec}\left(\bar{\Omega}_{n}\left(\hat{\theta}\right)\right)^{\prime}F_{1} + \frac{1}{n}\text{vec}\left(\bar{\Omega}_{n}\left(\hat{\theta}\right)\right)^{\prime}F_{2} + O_{p}\left(\frac{1}{n^{2}}\right),
$$
\n(121)

by [\(79\)](#page-33-5). Furthermore, by substituting ([80](#page-33-2)) and [\(81\)](#page-33-3) into  $vec\left(\,\bar{\bm{\varOmega}}_{n}\left(\hat{\bm{\theta}}\right)\right)'F_{1}$  and  $vec\left(\,\bar{\bm{\varOmega}}_{n}\left(\hat{\bm{\theta}}\right)\right)'F_{2},$  we have

$$
\begin{split}\n&vec\left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\Omega}}_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right)^{\prime}F_{1} \\
&= -\frac{1}{2}\mathbf{tr}\left[\bar{\boldsymbol{\Omega}}_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\otimes vec\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\right)^{\prime}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(4)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right] \\
&+ \frac{1}{2}\mathbf{tr}\left[\bar{\boldsymbol{\Omega}}_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{\prime}\left[\left( vec\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right)^{\prime}\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right)^{\prime}\otimes \bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right]\right] \\
&+ \frac{1}{2}\mathbf{tr}\left[\bar{\boldsymbol{\Omega}}_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{\prime}\left[\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\otimes \bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right]\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right],\n\end{split}
$$
\n
$$
\begin{split}\n&vec\left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\Omega}}_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{\prime}\left[\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\otimes \
$$

<span id="page-41-1"></span>From ([121](#page-41-0))–[\(123](#page-41-1))

$$
\begin{aligned} &\quad \operatorname{nvec}\left(\bar{\boldsymbol{\Omega}}_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right)^{\prime}\operatorname{vec}\left(V\left(\overline{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right) \\ &=-\mathbf{tr}\Big[\bar{\mathbf{\Omega}}_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\Big] \\ &-\frac{1}{2n}\mathbf{tr}\Bigg[\bar{\boldsymbol{\Omega}}_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\otimes\operatorname{vec}\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\right)^\prime\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(4)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\Bigg] \\ &+\frac{1}{2n}\mathbf{tr}\Bigg[\bar{\boldsymbol{\Omega}}_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^\prime\Bigg[\Big(\operatorname{vec}\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right)^\prime\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\Bigg] \\ &+\frac{1}{2n}\mathbf{tr}\Bigg[\bar{\boldsymbol{\Omega}}_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^\prime\Bigg[\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\otimes\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\Big]\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\Bigg] \Bigg] \end{aligned}
$$

$$
-\frac{1}{n}\mathbf{tr}\left[\left[\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\frac{\hat{p}^{(1)}}{\hat{p}}\right)' \otimes \bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right]\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{Q}}_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right] + \frac{1}{n}\mathbf{tr}\left[\bar{\boldsymbol{\Omega}}_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\frac{\hat{p}^{(2)}}{\hat{p}}\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right]-\frac{1}{n}\mathbf{tr}\left[\bar{\boldsymbol{\Omega}}_{n}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\frac{\hat{p}^{(1)}}{\hat{p}}\frac{\hat{p}^{(1)}}{\hat{p}}\frac{\hat{p}^{(1)}}{\hat{p}}\left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right)\right] + O_{p}\left(\frac{1}{n^{2}}\right).
$$
\n(124)

From ([120](#page-41-2)) and ([124](#page-42-3))

<span id="page-42-4"></span><span id="page-42-3"></span>
$$
P_M = -\mathbf{tr}\left[\bar{\boldsymbol{\Omega}}_n\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_n^{-1}\left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right] + \frac{\gamma_n}{n}C_1^M + \frac{1}{n}C_2^M + O_p\left(\frac{\gamma_n}{n^2}\right),\tag{125}
$$

where

$$
C_{1}^{M} = vec \left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n} \left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\right)^{\prime} \tilde{U}_{1} \bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1} \left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) \frac{\hat{p}^{(1)}}{\hat{p}} - \frac{1}{2} vec \left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n} \left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\right)^{\prime} \tilde{U}_{1} \bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1} \left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) \bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)} \left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{\prime} vec \left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n} \left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\right), C_{2}^{M} = -\frac{1}{2n} tr \left[\bar{\boldsymbol{\Omega}}_{n} \left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) \bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1} \left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) \left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1} \left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) \otimes vec \left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n} \left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{-1}\right)^{\prime}\right) \bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(4)} \left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right] + \frac{1}{2n} tr \left[\bar{\boldsymbol{\Omega}}_{n} \left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) \bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1} \left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) \left(\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1} \left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) \right) \bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)} \left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)^{\prime}\right] + \frac{1}{2n} tr \left[\bar{\boldsymbol{\Omega}}_{n} \left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) \bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1} \left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) \right] \tilde{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)} \left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right) \bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1} \left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right] \bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{(3)} \left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1} \left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)\right] - \frac{1}{2n} tr \left[\bar{\boldsymbol{\Omega}}_{n} \left(\hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}}\right)
$$

Since in [\(125\)](#page-42-4) $-$ **tr**  $\left[\bar{\varOmega}_{n}\left(\hat{\pmb{\theta}}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\hat{\pmb{\theta}}\right)\right]=P_{T},$  we have proved ([33](#page-15-8)) in [Theorem](#page-15-5) [4.1.](#page-15-5) From [Li et al.](#page-43-5) ([2017\)](#page-43-5),

$$
\ln p\left(\mathbf{y}|\overline{\theta}\right) = \ln p\left(\mathbf{y}|\hat{\theta}\right) - \frac{1}{2n}C_{21} + \frac{1}{2n}C_{23} + \frac{1}{8n}C_{12} + O_p\left(n^{-2}\right).
$$

Then we have

$$
\begin{split} \text{DIC}_{M} &= -2\ln p\left(\mathbf{y}|\overline{\theta}\right) + 2P_{M} \\ &= -2\ln p\left(\mathbf{y}|\widehat{\theta}\right) + \frac{1}{n}C_{21} - \frac{1}{n}C_{23} - \frac{1}{4n}C_{12} \\ &- 2\mathbf{tr}\left[\bar{\Omega}_{n}\left(\widehat{\theta}\right)\bar{\mathbf{H}}_{n}^{-1}\left(\widehat{\theta}\right)\right] + \frac{2\gamma_{n}}{n}C_{1}^{M} + \frac{2}{n}C_{2}^{M} + O_{p}\left(\frac{\gamma_{n}}{n^{2}}\right) \\ &= \text{TIC} + \frac{2\gamma_{n}}{n}C_{1}^{M} + \frac{1}{n}\left(C_{21} - C_{23} - \frac{1}{4}C_{12} + 2C_{2}^{M}\right) + O_{p}\left(\frac{\gamma_{n}}{n^{2}}\right). \end{split}
$$

We have proved [\(34\)](#page-15-9) in [Theorem](#page-15-5) [4.1](#page-15-5). The proof of Theorem 4.1 is completed.

## **Appendix B. Proof of remark 4.2**

Supplementary material related to this article can be found online at [https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jeconom.2019.11.002.](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jeconom.2019.11.002)

## **References**

<span id="page-42-0"></span>[Akaike, H., 1973. Information theory and an extension of the maximum likelihood principle. In: Second International Symposium on Information](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb1) [Theory, vol. 1. Springer Verlag, pp. 267–281.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb1)

<span id="page-42-2"></span><span id="page-42-1"></span>[Andrews, D.W.K., 1987. Consistency in nonlinear econometric models: a generic uniform law of large numbers. Econometrica 55 \(6\), 1465–1471.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb2) [Andrews, D.W.K., 1991. Heteroskedasticity and autocorrelation consistent covariant matrix estimation. Econometrica 59 \(3\), 817–858.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb3)

<span id="page-43-51"></span>[Avramov, D., Zhou, G.F., 2010. Bayesian portfolio analysis. Annu. Rev. Financ. Econ. 2, 25–47.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb4)

<span id="page-43-1"></span>[Bai, J., Wang, P., 2015. Identification and Bayesian estimation of dynamic factor models. J. Bus. Econom. Statist. 33 \(2\), 221–240.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb5)

<span id="page-43-42"></span><span id="page-43-3"></span>[Berg, A., Meyer, R., Yu, J., 2004. Deviance information criterion for comparing stochastic volatility models. J. Bus. Econom. Statist. 22, 107–120.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb6) [Box, G.E.P., 1976. Science and statistics. J. Amer. Statist. Assoc. 71 \(356\), 791–799.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb7)

<span id="page-43-8"></span><span id="page-43-6"></span>Brooks, S., 2002. Discussion on the paper by Spiegelhalter, Best, Carlin, and van de Linde (2002). J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B Stat. Methodol. 64, 616-618. [Burnham, K., Anderson, D., 2002. Model Selection and Multi-model Inference: A Practical Information-theoretic Approach. Springer.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb9)

<span id="page-43-13"></span>[Celeux, G., Forbes, F., Robert, C., Titterington, D., 2006. Deviance information criteria for missing data models. Bayesian Anal. 1, 651–674.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb10)

<span id="page-43-4"></span>[Chan, J.C., Eisenstat, E., 2018. Bayesian model comparison for time-varying parameter VARs with stochastic volatility. J. Appl. Econometrics 33 \(4\),](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb11) [509–532.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb11)

<span id="page-43-2"></span>[Chan, J.C., Grant, A.L., 2016a. On the observed-data deviance information criterion for volatility modeling. J. Financ. Econ. 14 \(4\), 772–802.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb12)

<span id="page-43-12"></span>[Chan, J.C., Grant, A.L., 2016b. Fast computation of the deviance information criterion for latent variable models. Comput. Statist. Data Anal. 100,](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb13) [847–859.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb13)

<span id="page-43-24"></span>[Chen, C., 1985. On asymptotic normality of limiting density functions with Bayesian implications. J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B Stat. Methodol. 47, 540–546.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb14)

<span id="page-43-17"></span>[Clark, P., 1973. A subordinated stochastic process model with finite variance for speculative prices. Econometrica 41, 135–155.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb15)

<span id="page-43-38"></span>[Creal, D., 2012. A survey of sequential Monte Carlo methods for economics and finance. Econometric Rev. 31 \(3\), 245–296.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb16)

<span id="page-43-20"></span>[Davidson, J., 1992. A central limit theorem for globally nonstationary near-epoch dependent functions of mixing processes. Econometric Theory 8,](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb17) [313–329.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb17)

<span id="page-43-21"></span>[Davidson, J., 1993. A central limit theorem for globally nonstationary near-epoch dependent functions of mixing processes: the asymptotically](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb18) [degenerate case. Econometric Theory 9, 402–412.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb18)

<span id="page-43-29"></span>[Dempster, A., Laird, N., Rubin, D., 1977. Maximum likelihood from incomplete data via the EM algorithm. J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B Stat. Methodol. 39,](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb19) [1–38.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb19)

<span id="page-43-47"></span>Ding, J., Tarokh, V., Yang, Y., 2019. Optimal variable selection in regression models. Working paper, University of Minnesota.

<span id="page-43-37"></span>[Doucet, A., Johansen, A.M., 2009. A tutorial on particle filtering and smoothing: fifteen years later. In: Handbook of Nonlinear Filtering, vol. 12.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb21) [pp. 656–704.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb21)

<span id="page-43-34"></span>Doucet, A., Shephard, N., 2012. Robust inference on parameters via particle filters and sandwich covariance matrices. Working Paper, University of Oxford, Department of Economics.

<span id="page-43-50"></span>[Fama, E.F., French, K.R., 1993. Common risk factors in the returns on stocks and bonds. J. Financ. Econ. 33, 3–56.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb23)

<span id="page-43-19"></span><span id="page-43-0"></span>[Galán, J.E., Veiga, H., Wiper, M.P., 2014. Bayesian estimation of inefficiency heterogeneity in stochastic frontier models. J. Product. Anal. 42, 85–101.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb24) [Gallant, A.R., White, H., 1988. A Unified Theory of Estimation and Inference for Nonlinear Dynamic Models. Blackwell.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb25)

<span id="page-43-16"></span>[Gelman, A., Carlin, J.B., Stern, H.S., Dunson, D.B., Vehtari, A., Rubin, D.B., 2013. Bayesian Data Analysis. CRC press.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb26)

<span id="page-43-7"></span>[Geweke, J., Amisano, G., 2011. Optimal prediction pools. J. Econometrics 164, 130–141.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb27)

<span id="page-43-28"></span><span id="page-43-27"></span>[Geweke, J., Keane, M., 2001. Computationally intensive methods for integration in econometrics. In: Handbook of Econometrics, vol. 5. pp. 3463–3568.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb28) [Ghosh, J., Ramamoorthi, R., 2003. Bayesian Nonparametrics. Springer Verlag.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb29)

<span id="page-43-40"></span>[Gordon, N.J., Salmond, D.J., Smith, A.F.M., 1993. Novel approach to nonlinear/non-gaussian bayesian state estimation. IEEE Proc. F 140, 107–113.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb30)

<span id="page-43-35"></span>[Harvey, A.C., 1989. Forecasting, Structural Time Series Models and the Kalman Filter. Cambridge University Press, Cambridge.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb31)

<span id="page-43-45"></span><span id="page-43-30"></span>[Ibrahim, J., Zhu, H., Tang, N.S., 2008. Model selection criteria for missing-data problems using the EM algorithm. J. Amer. Statist. Assoc. 103, 1648–1658.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb32) [Inoue, A., Shintani, M., 2018. Quasi-bayesian model selection. Quantitative Economics 9, 1265–1297.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb33)

<span id="page-43-36"></span>[Iskrev, N., 2008. Evaluating the information matrix in linearized DSGE models. Econom. Lett. 99 \(3\), 607–610.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb34)

<span id="page-43-56"></span>[Isserlis, L., 1918. On a formula for the product-moment coefficient of any order of a normal frequency distribution in any number of variables.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb35) [Biometrika 12, 134–139.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb35)

<span id="page-43-22"></span>[de Jong, R.M., 1997. Central limit theorems for dependent heterogeneous random variables. Econometric Theory 13, 353–367.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb36)

<span id="page-43-44"></span>[de Jong, R.M., Davidson, J., 2000. Consistency of kernel estimators of heteroscedastic and autocorrelated covariance matrices. Econometrica 68 \(2\),](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb37) [407–423.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb37)

<span id="page-43-46"></span>[Kass, R.E., Raftery, A.E., 1995. Bayes factors. J. Amer. Statist. Assoc. 90 \(430\), 773–795.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb38)

- <span id="page-43-23"></span>[Kass, R., Tierney, L., Kadane, J., 1990. The validity of posterior expansions based on Laplace's method. In: Geisser, S., Hodges, J.S., Press, S.J., Zellner, A.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb39) [\(Eds.\), Bayesian and Likelihood Methods in Statistics and Econometrics. Elsevier Science Publishers B.V, North-Holland.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb39)
- <span id="page-43-48"></span>[Kass, R.E., Wasserman, L., 1995. A reference Bayesian test for nested hypotheses and its relationship to the Schwarz criterion. J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb40) [90 \(431\), 928–934.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb40)

<span id="page-43-25"></span>[Kim, J., 1994. Bayesian asymptotic theory in a time series model with a possible nonstationary process. Econometric Theory 10, 764–773.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb41)

<span id="page-43-26"></span>[Kim, J., 1998. Large sample properties of posterior densities, Bayesian information criterion and the likelihood principle in nonstationary time series](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb42) [models. Econometrica 66, 359–380.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb42)

<span id="page-43-53"></span><span id="page-43-15"></span>[Kim, S., Shephard, N., Chib, S., 1998. Stochastic volatility: likelihood inference and comparison with ARCH models. Rev. Econom. Stud. 65, 361–393.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb43) [Lancaster, T., 2000. The incidental parameter problem since 1948. J. Econometrics 95 \(2\), 391–413.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb44)

<span id="page-43-5"></span>Li, Y., Yu, J., Zeng, T., 2017. Deviation information criterion for Bayesian model comparison: justification and variation, Working Paper, Singapore Management University.

<span id="page-43-54"></span>[Li, Y., Yu, J., Zeng, T., 2019. Hypothesis testing, specification testing and model selection based on the MCMC output using R. In: Handbook of](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb46) [Statistics, vol. 41. pp. 81–115.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb46)

<span id="page-43-49"></span>[Liang, F., Paulo, R., Molina, G., Clyde, M.A., Berger, J.O., 2008. Mixtures of](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb47) *g* priors for Bayesian variable selection. J. Amer. Statist. Assoc. 103 (481), [410–423.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb47)

<span id="page-43-55"></span><span id="page-43-32"></span>[Louis, T.A., 1982. Finding the observed information matrix when using the EM algorithm. J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B Stat. Methodol. 44, 226–233.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb48)

[Magnus, J., Neudecker, H., 1999. Matrix Differential Calculus with Applications in Statistics and Econometrics. Wiley, Chichester.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb49)

<span id="page-43-52"></span>[Meyer, R., Yu, J., 2000. BUGS for a Bayesian analysis of stochastic volatility models. Econom. J. 3, 198–215.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb50)

<span id="page-43-18"></span>[Meyn, S.P., Tweedie, R.L., 2012. Markov Chains and Stochastic Stability. Springer Science & Business Media.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb51)

<span id="page-43-10"></span>[Millar, R.B., 2009. Comparison of hierarchical Bayesian models for over-dispersed count data using DIC and Bayes factors. Biometrics 65, 962–969.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb52)

<span id="page-43-11"></span>[Millar, R.B., McKechnie, S., 2014. A one-step-ahead pseudo DIC for comparison of Bayesian state-space models. Biometrics 70, 972–980.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb53)

<span id="page-43-43"></span>[Newey, W.K., West, K.D., 1987. A simple, positive semi-definite, heteroscedasticity and autocorrelation consistent covariance matrix. Econometrica](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb54) [55, 703–708.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb54)

<span id="page-43-14"></span>[Neyman, J., Scott, E.L., 1948. Consistent estimates based on partially consistent observations. Econometrica 16 \(1\), 1–32.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb55)

<span id="page-43-33"></span><span id="page-43-9"></span>[Norets, A., 2009. Inference in dynamic discrete choice models with serially correlated unobserved state variables. Econometrica 77 \(5\), 1665–1682.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb56) [Oakes, D., 1999. Direct calculation of the information matrix via the EM algorithm. J. R. Stat. Soc. B 61, 479–482.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb57)

<span id="page-43-41"></span>[Pitt, M.K., Shephard, N., 1999. Filtering via simulation: auxiliary particle filters. J. Amer. Statist. Assoc. 94, 590–599.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb58)

<span id="page-43-39"></span>[Poyiadjis, G., Doucet, A., Singh, S.S., 2011. Particle approximations of the score and observed information matrix in state-space models with application](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb59) [to parameter estimation. Biometrika 98 \(1\), 65–80.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb59)

<span id="page-43-31"></span>[Rue, H., Martino, S., Chopin, N., 2009. Approximate Bayesian inference for latent Gaussian models by using integrated nested Laplace approximations.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb60) [J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B Stat. Methodol. 71, 319–392.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb60)

<span id="page-44-8"></span><span id="page-44-3"></span>[Rue, H., Steinsland, I., Erland, S., 2004. Approximating hidden Gaussian Markov random fields. J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B Stat. Methodol. 66, 877–892.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb61) [Schwarz, G.E., 1978. Estimating the dimension of a model. Ann. Statist. 6 \(2\), 461–464.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb62)

<span id="page-44-0"></span>[Spiegelhalter, D., Best, N., Carlin, B., van der Linde, A., 2002. Bayesian measures of model complexity and fit. J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B Stat. Methodol.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb63) [64, 583–639.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb63)

<span id="page-44-1"></span>[Spiegelhalter, D., Best, N., Carlin, B., van der Linde, A., 2014. The deviance information criterion: 12 years on. J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B Stat. Methodol.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb64) [76, 485–493.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb64)

<span id="page-44-4"></span>[Stern, S., 1997. Simulation-based estimation. J. Econ. Lit. 35, 2006–2039.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb65)

<span id="page-44-9"></span>[Stone, M., 1977. An asymptotic equivalence of choice of model by cross-validation and akaike's criterion. J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B Stat. Methodol. 39 \(1\),](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb66) [44–47.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb66)

<span id="page-44-2"></span>[Takeuchi, K., 1976. Distribution of information statistics and a criterion of model fitting. Suri-Kagaku \(Math. Sci.\) 153, 12–18, \(in Japanese\).](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb67)

<span id="page-44-5"></span>[Tanner, M., Wong, W., 1987. The calculation of posterior distributions by data augmentation. J. Amer. Statist. Assoc. 82, 528–540.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb68)

<span id="page-44-10"></span>[Vehtari, A., Ojanen, J., 2012. A survey of Bayesian predictive methods for model assessment, selection and comparison. Stat. Surv. 6, 142–228.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb69)

<span id="page-44-14"></span><span id="page-44-7"></span>[Vignat, C., 2012. A generalized Isserlis theorem for location mixtures of Gaussian random vectors. Statist. Probab. Lett. 82 \(1\), 67–71.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb70) [White, H., 1996. Estimation, Inference and Specification Analysis. Cambridge university press.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb71)

<span id="page-44-13"></span>[Withers, C.S., 1985. The moments of the multivariate normal. Bull. Aust. Math. Soc. 32, 103–107.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb72)

<span id="page-44-6"></span>[Wooldridge, J.M., 1994. Estimation and inference for dependent processes. In: HandBook of Econometrics, vol. 4. pp. 2639–2738.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb73)

<span id="page-44-12"></span>[Yu, J., 2005. On leverage in a stochastic volatility model. J. Econometrics 127, 165–178.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb74)

<span id="page-44-11"></span>[Zhou, G.F., 1993. Asset pricing testing under alternative distributions. J. Finance 5, 1927–1942.](http://refhub.elsevier.com/S0304-4076(19)30227-1/sb75)